



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





Harriet

~~626~~

KBK

~~Harriet~~



ANNEX

..

John Marshall

Oct. 1807.



Engraved by R. Wall & Co.

John Harriott Esq.

John Zarrillo
Dec. 1907.



John Harriott Esq.

*To my affectionate Children and Grand-
Children.*

DEDICATIONS, in general, are the vehicles of fulsome flattery: *this*, however, will I hope be acquitted of such an imputation, and at least have the recommendation of brevity. To you, my sincerely - beloved children, I therefore dedicate these Memoirs, as those whom I love and esteem more than I do any other on earth; you well know it, and all who are or wish to be thought affectionate parents will readily give me credit for my sincerity.

This is not the only reason: one of my strongest inducements for undertaking a work, to which I feel myself however but too incompetent, was to meet your wishes, by recording what would otherwise most

probably be soon forgotten. I feel assured, likewise, that none will set a greater value upon it; and most devoutly do I pray, unto Almighty God, that my Memoirs and Struggles through Life may prove instructive in guarding you against the errors and follies which you may discover therein, and teach you that you ought never to despair, but place a firm reliance on the Providence of God and your own exertions.

Your truly affectionate father,

JOHN HARRIOTT.

Thomas-Pelice, October 1, 1807.

PREFACE.

WHEN a man finds himself far advanced in years, (upwards of threescore,) a retrospective view of his conduct may be useful and instructive; though, by this, it is not meant that such retrospect ought not to have taken place every year, nay every day, of his life. The result of such investigation, fairly and candidly made, (and where is the use of a man's deceiving himself?) will tend to make the remainder of his days serenely pleasant and comfortable, if, upon the whole, he is conscious of having spent his time to a good purpose, and lived a useful member of society.

Should it prove otherwise, he ought to lose no time in reforming his principles and amending his manners ; and certainly much may be done by making reparation for such injuries as are still within his power to compensate, and much by sincere repentance, proved to be so by the only true test of sincerity, a complete amendment of conduct.

Such wholesome views, combined with amusement, gave birth to the following sheets: if instruction or amusement be derived from them, the Author's trouble will be amply recompensed; but, should they sink into oblivion, his own motives will afford him consolation. He has launched his bark into a sea he is unacquainted with, and without the requisite tackle for the voyage: he has directed his course by *plain sailing*, and has not attempted to work *traverse* by the *classics*, of which he is but a humble admirer: having had

but little acquaintance with them when young, he should expose himself by pretending to an intimacy now that he is old.

In the following pages, the Reader is not to expect romantic feats of gallantry. There is no dying from excess of love, though there is love in abundance for one man; if one favourite dies, in good time another succeeds, and another: the affections of the heart not being so rigidly confined, but that, with an open generous love for the whole sex, the Author, in spite of severe individual losses, was fortunate enough to find an ample sufficiency, among the amiable part of society, to rekindle his affections and procure him the enjoyment of social and domestic comfort.

The Author professes himself to be a mere mortal, subject to the common passions of his kind: amidst the singular occurrences of an adventurous life, possibly

he may be allowed to have possessed a strong undaunted spirit when opposed to danger, and an alacrity to meet it half way, as the surest means of overcoming difficulties; and he trusts that the tenor of his life will be found to evince, that his main pursuits have not been so selfish, but that, in endeavouring to benefit himself, the community, by his success, were also likely to be benefited.

Considered separately, the events of his life may not appear extraordinary; but, from his various travels and adventures, fortunate and unfortunate, without the adventitious aid of family, friends, fortune, or classical education, this useful maxim may be deduced, that firm and steady perseverance, aided by resignation to the will of Providence, are the means best calculated for a safe voyage through the perilous ocean of life.

In writing these Memoirs, it was not the Author's original design to publish them during his life; circumstances and arguments, however, have induced him to send them to the press. He intended to withhold his name; but, it being suggested that it would look as if he were ashamed or afraid, he has affixed it, and acknowledges the bantling.

He publishes at his own risk, that no other may suffer in the event of a loss; he declines subscriptions, that the booksellers may have their fair profits; he requests the critics will exercise their judgements with forbearance; and he tenders his Memoirs to the public, in the hope that they may be found useful and entertaining.

INTRODUCTION.

STRUGGLES through Life! are they real or fictitious? It matters not, gentle Reader; please thyself in adopting such belief as suits thee best. Certainly, the Author has it in his power to declare whether they are true or fabulous; most assuredly he must himself know, yet, should he daringly advance and avow the whole to be strictly true, would he not be liable to much unpleasant animadversion?

Mankind believe or disbelieve according to their habits; that, which appears impossible to one, creates wonder that any doubt can be entertained of it by another. The most extravagant flights of imagination would find credit sooner than a very common operation of nature, when related to some millions of inhabitants of various parts of this globe; who, judging from their own habits and confined in their means of information and experience, conceive it to be

utterly impossible; while as many, or more, are as much astonished at its being doubted. The circumstance alluded to is *frost*, which, to millions of inhabitants of the torrid zone, in Asia, Africa, and America, is so completely unknown, that it would require much ingenuity to invent a tale which they would have more difficulty in believing, than that of water, or large rivers, becoming so solid as to admit of men and beasts to travel upon the surface without sinking or even wetting their feet. By way of illustrating this fact, permit me, courteous Reader, to tell you a sailor's story.

A sailor, who had been many years absent from his mother, who lived in an inland county, returned to his native village, after a variety of voyages to different parts of the globe, and was heartily welcomed home by the good old woman, who had long considered him as lost. Soon after his arrival, the old lady became inquisitive and desirous to learn what *strange things* her son John had seen upon the mighty deep. Among a variety of things that Jack recollected, he mentioned his having frequently seen *flying fish*. "Stop, Johny," says his mother, "don't try to impose such monstrous impossibilities on me, child; for, in good truth, I could as soon believe you had seen *flying cows*; for cows, you know, John, can live out of water. Therefore,

tell me honestly what you have seen in reality, but no more falsehoods, Johny."

Jack felt himself affronted; and, turning his quid about, when pressed for more curious information, he said, prefacing it with an oath, "Mayhap, mother, you won't believe me, when I tell you, that, casting our anchor once in the Red Sea, it was with difficulty we hove it up again; which was occasioned, do you see, mother, by a large wheel hanging on one of the flukes of the anchor. It appeared a strange old Grecian to look at; so we hoisted it in, and our captain, do ye mind me, being a scholar, overhauled him and discovered it was one of Pharaoh's chariot-wheels, when he was capsized in the Red Sea." This suited the meridian of the old lady's understanding: "Ay, ay, Johny," cried she, "I *can* believe this, for we read of it in the bible; but never talk to me of flying fish."

The truth is, that those who have seen much of the world are placed in rather an awkward situation. If, on being questioned, they relate all they have seen or known, though with the strictest attention to truth, they are almost certain of being reckoned *travellers*, a term pretty well understood as synonymous to *lying*: on the other hand, if, to avoid such odium, they decline giving an account of what they have seen, their good-natured neighbours set them down *as fools*, for not having noticed something

abroad more wonderful than they have seen at home.

To steer clear, therefore, of such imputation as much as is in the Author's power, he will neither assert nor deny the truth of what is herein related, but leave it to the free exercise of the Reader's credence. If, as an uninformed inhabitant of the torrid zone, he could believe the tale of water becoming a solid body, there will be nothing more difficult to believe in this history; but, should his faith, like the old lady's, be confined to his own bible, he is welcome to believe or disbelieve as little or as much as he pleases; it is of no consequence to the Author, if the book be but allowed to convey useful entertainment and teach an instructive lesson.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

| | Page |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| <i>The history commences with school-anecdotes</i> | 1 |

CHAPTER II.

| | |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|
| <i>Voyage to New York, to Halifax, back to New York; redeem a transport-girl</i> | 8 |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---|

CHAPTER III.

| | |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Sail for Newfoundland; danger of shipwreck; arrival at St John's; result of my Quixote-like purchase</i> | 19 |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER IV.

| | |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Sail for Gibraltar; fall in with Admiral B——; a smart engagement, capture of a French frigate; arrive at Gibraltar</i> | 25 |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER V.

| | |
|------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Cruising up the Mediterranean</i> | 29 |
|------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER VI.

| | |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>In loss; masquerades; the plague and consequences; dispute with the Turkish Bashaw at St Jean d'Acre and with the French ships there</i> | 32 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER VII.

| | |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Sail from St Jean d'Acre ; fall in with and capture one of the French ships</i> | 44 |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER VIII.

| | |
|-----------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Anecdotes of Captain Puttick</i> | 45 |
|-----------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER IX.

| | |
|-------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>The Island of Lampedocia</i> | 54 |
|-------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER X.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Adventure in Corsica</i> | 56 |
|---------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XI.

| | |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Take a xebecque on our passage to Gibraltar</i> | 64 |
|--------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XII.

| | |
|----------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Earthquake off Lisbon</i> | 65 |
|----------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XIII.

| | |
|----------------------------|----|
| <i>Shipwreck</i> | 70 |
|----------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XIV.

| | |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Land at Plymouth ; decline a promising good offer to live on shore ; to sea again ; at the attack of the Hurvannah and re-taking of Newfoundland</i> | 86 |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XV.

| | |
|------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Employed on a shipwreck</i> | 89 |
|------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XVI.

| | |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>A trip up the Baltic ; a present from Sir George Macartney to Lord Holland ; a pleasant frolic at Holland-house</i> | 92 |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|

CHAPTER XVII.

| | |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Voyages in the merchant-service ; a duel</i> | 100 |
|-----------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XVIII.

| | |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Meet with my old shipmate; carry a challenge from him to his former commander; obliged to fly; overtaken and cooped up in Dover-Castle</i> | 103 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XIX.

| | |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>A visit to the Savages in North America</i> | 106 |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XX.

| | |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Peaceable times; disbanded sea-officers at a loss what to do; my relation volunteers with Count Orlov; accept a military appointment for India, commence soldier; the King of Denmark at the Tower; a crowded theatre</i> | 113 |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XXI.

| | |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Embark for India; my old shipmate B—— follows my relation D——le in the Russian service; passage to the Cape of Good Hope</i> | 123 |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XXII.

| | |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>At the Cape, unpleasant situation on the Table-Mount; comfortable and cheap living</i> | 125 |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XXIII.

| | |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival at Madras; with General Smith at the close of the war with Hyder Ally; Colonel C——s gallant offer to attack Hyder at the Mount; bashfulness of the governor, &c.; satirical sketch of the same</i> | 129 |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XXIV.

| | |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>General Smith, his affability, &c.; Major Fitzgerald, manual wit</i> | 132 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

CHAPTER XXV.

| | |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>The army new disciplined; Major Fitzgerald's friendly present; my Gentoo servant, his sufferings</i> | 135 |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

xviii

CHAPTER XXVI.

Arrival at Masulipatam; Lieutenant Barnevall's liberal offer to a stranger; observations on the superior liberality of the East, and consequent want of caution on returning to Europe; Mrs W—— and her European servant 139

CHAPTER XXVII.

Arrive at Ellore; flattering reception; again new disciplining the army 144

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Appointed judge-advocate; volunteer to officiate as chaplain, by marrying, christening, burying, &c. 145

CHAPTER XXIX.

The East-India Company's military service preferable to others; a concise account of the Sepoys, as officered by Europeans; condition and advantages of such officers 148

CHAPTER XXX.

Thoughts on the mode of settling the jembunda which the rajahs pay to the Company, and consequences of mismanagement; the death of a rajah, by his rebelling or refusing to pay; severely wounded 151

CHAPTER XXXI.

Various anecdotes, viz. fish falling in a shower of rain; deer branding over soldiers heads in a line of march; a young woman carried off by a tiger in sight of the army 154

CHAPTER XXXII.

Anecdotes continued; Captain Powell's recovery from a Gicgre fever by drinking of claret; our Pay-Master Daniel's recovery from a flux by drinking milk; observations thereon 156

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Death of an officer who was refused porter in a fever, an agreement entered into in consequence, by several officers, to administer relief to each other if demanded; peacocks and tigers found in the same wild haunts; Condepillce, or the Hills of Tigres, abounding with monkeys, green pigeons, and paroquets; men's nests in trees, from which the natives shoot tigers 160

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Poisonous snakes difficult to distinguish from the branches they lie upon; the large mountain-snake; a narrow escape from a Couva Manill, whose bite is certain death 163

CHAPTER XXXV.

Extraordinary view of a thunder-storm when sitting far above it, with a description of the fort where it happened; its effects on the Author, and his observations 165

CHAPTER XXXVI.

A royal tiger destroying a large buffalo; another royal tiger, his demeanour, with the effect on a horse and rider 169

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Alarms in travelling through a wood in a stormy night 173

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Hawking; tiger-shooting by Europeans; hunting the wild boar 176

CHAPTER XXXIX.

Indian conjurors 179

CHAPTER XL.

Dutch hospitality; Free-Masonry 182

CHAPTER XLI.

A strange thief; method of slaming the most audacious 185

CHAPTER XLII.

Bramins; perform a miracle 189

CHAPTER XLIII.

*Decline settling at Madras as a lawyer; embark on board a country ship
for the Island of Sumatra; water-spouts 195*

CHAPTER XLIV.

*Arrive at Acheen; introduced to the sultan; large cannon half sunk in
the earth, evidence of greater strength formerly; an enormous gun
over the gate-way of the palace 199*

CHAPTER XLV.

*Malay punishments; precautions necessary to guard against surprise from
Malay pirates; running a smack; jealousy and savage revenge;
singular ordeal of Malays accused of adultery 203*

CHAPTER XLVI.

*Ayrbungy, Padang, Tappanooly; mountaineer-aborigines, their re-
puted cannabism accounted for; decline their invitation to accom-
pany them to their mountains; their report of an Englishman then
residing with them 207*

CHAPTER XLVII.

*Moco-Moco; visit the old sultan; arrive at Pencoolen; hospitality of the
settlement; scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation is so
strong; fire produced by bamboo-friction; grass too strong for
horses to penetrate, its fierce burning 211*

CHAPTER XLVIII.

*Earthquakes; violent illness and rash cure; habit of morning ablutions,
and sitting al fresco in the hot land winds; a new cure for the
itch 215*

CHAPTER XLIX.

Wild elephants and buffaloes; an unexpected meeting; intelligence of Lieutenant D——le burning the Turkish fleet; a short account of my old shipmate's adventures 222

CHAPTER L.

Passage from Sumatra to the Cape of Good Hope; destructive effects of the sea-scurvy; a white squall off the Cape; sickly and weak state of our ship's crew; their rapid recovery by drinking new wine 228

CHAPTER LI.

Invited to live at the Cape; observations and suggestions relative to its improvement as an English colony 235

CHAPTER LII.

Arrive at St Helena; singular courtship; Isle of Ascension; catching of turtle; short account of the interior, formed by a sub-marine volcano; the island inhabited by sea-fowl, wild goats, and rats; instinct of the young turtle, its many enemies; an opinion respecting their food 244

CHAPTER LIII.

Land at Plymouth; my salutation; B—— continues with the ship; the smell of tallow candles very offensive after a long absence; intentions respecting my wounded leg; Surgeon Sharp's candid advice 252

CHAPTER LIV.

Curious adventure of Byrn with the celebrated Miss Kennedy 257

CHAPTER LV.

Reconcile my old ship-mate B—— to his family; my reception at the secretary-of-state's office 269

CHAPTER LVI.

Happily married; irreparable loss of wife and child within a year 273

CHAPTER LVII.

Unsettled; commence underwriter at Lloyd's; no losses, yet give it up; marry again; engage largely in farming, and in an extensive liquor-business; misfortunes of my wife's father 274

CHAPTER LVIII.

*Arrested for 1800*l*. by a man I never saw nor heard of 277*

CHAPTER LIX.

*Threatened to be arrested for 4500*l*. my father-in-law's debts; serious alternative of sacrificing a considerable property or hanging him 280*

CHAPTER LX.

Quit mercantile concerns; retire solely to farming; difference of living in the country within the last fifty years 286

CHAPTER LXI.

Anecdotes of worthy clergymen; poetical order for wine; suitable answer 290

CHAPTER LXII.

Pleasant and useful public meetings promoted; anecdotes of a rich man; improvements easily made, if undertaken properly; people in the country as profligate in principle as they are in cities 297

CHAPTER LXIII.

A country duel; ingratitude; a London duel, with its happy conclusion 306

CHAPTER LXIV.

Purchase an island, overflowed by the sea seven feet deep in spring-tides; build a wall, nearly three miles in circumference, to enclose it from the sea, with suitable buildings for a farm; nature of the soil, &c. 310

XXIII

CHAPTER LXV.

The corn-factors contest with the farmers; origin of the corn-factors 319

CHAPTER LXVI.

Progress of vegetation on land first taken from the sea; gold medal from the Society for Encouragement of Arts, &c. 325

CHAPTER LXVII.

A family rescued from deep distress 327

CHAPTER LXVIII.

Courting in the suds at midnight 335

CHAPTER LXIX.

Again a widower; marry again; act as a magistrate; country witches 338

CHAPTER LXX.

Trip to France; premium for a road-harrow; publish tables for the preservation of estates; observations on maintaining the poor 344

CHAPTER LXXI.

The island improves in value; sink three wells for fresh water, but am disappointed; discover a surface of the earth, at the depth of twenty-two feet 350

CHAPTER LXXII.

A dreadful fire; house and offices all burnt; save my family from the windows, in the dead of the night 352

CHAPTER LXXIII.

Kind attention of neighbours; rebuild my house: favourable prospect of my island 359

CHAPTER LXXIV.

Inundation; complete ruin; meeting of creditors; generous conduct of friends

CHAPTER LXXV.

Soothing and liberal courtesy of noblemen, ladies, and the public; benevolence

CHAPTER LXXVI.

Having recovered my island, find the crops destroyed and the vegetable powers thrown back by the superabundant salts; the prospect of restoration dangerous and tedious

STRUGGLES

THROUGH

LIFE, &c.

CHAPTER I.

The history commences with school-anecdotes.

I BELIEVE it is generally expected of the humblest historian to give some account of his origin. My parents I much revered and might truly be proud of, though without rank or riches to distinguish them. My father had served in the navy, and afterwards was master of a merchant-ship: my grand-father was the last of the family that was born at Boulton, in Northamptonshire, where the family had lived for several centuries; and the end of the town, where they resided as tanners, went by their name. When the estate was sold to the Duke of M——, part of it being

vol. I. B *retire*

copy-hold, the title-deeds were traced back in the family as far as William Rufus. — This is all which I have to boast of concerning ancestry.

In the course of a plain useful education, (the only fortune our father had to give his many children,) until just turned of thirteen, probably I witnessed and played as many school-pranks as others: yet I shall relate but two, and those merely to shew early propensities and the effect which they may produce, contrary to that which I believe is generally supposed.

The robbing of orchards and gardens by school-boys is not thought much of by those who do not suffer: an old gardener in our neighbourhood thought differently, as his livelihood depended on the produce. A party of six or seven of us, taking what we conceived to be a good opportunity, when we heard he was from home, broke into his orchard and climbed a tree of beautiful looking apples. I was busy shaking them down, when the old man put us all to flight by rising up, at a small distance, from some pease-haum, where he was hid behind a large mawkin, or scare-crow: I was down in an instant, and too nimble to be caught.

We thought ourselves safe; but the old man had marked two of us, and heard the names of one or two more when calling to each other. In the evening, he came and made his complaint. *Domine* ordered us all into close confinement,

with nothing but bread and water, from Saturday night until Monday morning, when we had our usual breakfast, out of mere pity, as he said, for the fate that awaited us, and which he had endeavoured to save us from, but in vain; for the old gardener had made his complaint to a magistrate, before whom we were then to be taken, tied together like felons. A constable attended, and we were marched along the turnpike-road, for a mile and a half, to his worship's house: he was a clergyman, and reckoned very severe. The charge being made, we were asked what we had to say before we were committed to prison: the ignominy of the trial, the consequent punishment, the distress of our parents, &c. were forcibly laid down. I had been stubborn, or, as I reckoned it, firm, through the whole, until my parents, &c. were mentioned; I then cried like a child, and in most piteous terms prayed to be forgiven: his reverence got up and hurried out of the room, taking Domine with him. Never, surely, was a plan of the kind better contrived and carried on to produce a proper effect: it made a wholesome impression on my mind, never to be effaced. The gardener was sent for, and, soon after, they all returned; when the justice informed us, that our master had, with some difficulty, prevailed on the gardener to forgive us, on account of our parents, on our promising, before the magistrate, not to offend.

again. This we very earnestly did; and most truly did I keep my promise, although it was not many days before we learned that the whole was a contrivance between his Worship and Domine.

The other circumstance was not a prank, but a trick, or rather a lying piece of thievery, that I would rather conceal than expose, if it were not for the good effect I am confident it produced on me the whole of my life.

Several of us were playing together, when one of the boys tossed up a shilling: it was caught by another, chucked by him to a third, and bandied about a good deal, until it dropped between me and another boy, and could not be found again after the strictest search we could make: nor did I know more of it than any other, at that time; but, an hour or two after, as I was swinging on the bough of an oak-tree, I saw something glitter as it fell from the cuff of my coat-sleeve; picking it up, I found it was a shilling, and I confess I had no doubt of its being the same shilling that had been so strangely lost. I soon felt strongly tempted to keep it, nor was I deficient in argument, to persuade myself I had a kind of right, by so finding the shilling at a considerable distance from the place where one had been lost. Honesty and roguery battled it for some time, until the latter got the mastery, by leading me to the chandler's shop, where I changed it to *purchase something for the tooth*. It was soon

known that I had money to spend, and I was challenged about the shilling. I could truly say I knew nothing about the shilling when lost, acknowledged I had found one under the oak, but concealed the circumstance of seeing it fall from my cuff. I obtained no credit for any thing which I said concerning the oak, and those, who were not afraid of being thrashed, charged me with stealing it while at play together.

God knows whether I had a stronger propensity to pilfering than others, I never discovered it before; and I felt so punished, whenever it occurred to my memory, that I would have given worlds to have had it undone. This I knew was impossible: dishonesty and lying I found were inseparable; and, personifying them in idea, they appeared as hideous and terrifying as the head of Medusa. I was equally sensible of the loss which I had sustained in my own feelings: I felt abashed, ashamed, and afraid that honesty and truth had left me and were irrecoverable. I never had set half the value upon them before: I figured them as beautiful virgins, whom I loved and coveted to recover for the peace and happiness I possessed before I parted from them; and, comparing it with the misery I had suffered since, I vowed, as religiously and solemnly as was in my power, never again to allow a moment's hesitation in cleaving to truth and honesty; and I can truly

say I have loved them since for their own sakes.

Let others, at my age or any age, confess their errors as freely, with the operation it has had on their minds when young, that they may serve as beacons to save youth from being lost on such quicksands; or, if just touching, to warn them of their danger, if not resolutely attended to by heaving their little vessel into clear water with all possible dispatch, and keeping a better watch in future. It is the remaining indolent and indifferent about it, until settled ever so little in the quicksand, that increases the difficulties a hundred fold, and soon renders it nearly impossible to save the vessel, much less any of the cargo. On the other hand, if speedily recovered, the remembrance of such danger may be highly beneficial through the whole of their voyage.

I declare, openly and candidly, that, in various trying and critical situations of my life, a momentary recollection of this before-mentioned baseness while a school-boy, with the self-convicted punishment that followed, proved of infinite service in guarding and checking me against temptation to do wrong. A consciousness of acting uprightly has enabled me to face and overcome dangers and difficulties, which otherwise I must have sunk under. A chearful, open, *countenanec*, a natural flow of spirits, and a

never-hesitating firm step, accompany such internal sense of doing right, which a contrary conduct never can acquire, although aided by the greatest arts of hypocrisy and dissimulation.

On this topic, I speak feelingly and most seriously, as a father and grand-father to many children, who have long been pressing me, together with other friends, to give them a written account of my life.

I aim not at dull preaching: gaiety of heart and cheerful social pleasures have ever been my favourites, and I mean to encourage them to the latest period of my life. I do not like those gloomy-hearted and cloudy-headed mortals, who conceive, that, to be religious and good, they must appear with sour, crabbed, countenances; relinquishing the many innocent pleasures of society, as inimical to religion and repugnant to the will of the Deity. Nor do I admire those, who, having spent their own hey-day of youth, look with envy on those who succeed them; morosely exclaiming against their enjoyment of recreations and pastimes which they no longer are capable of themselves. To me, it appears more consistent and grateful to enjoy, with cheerfulness, all that it has pleased the Divine Providence to bless us with: what I cannot enjoy myself, I rejoice to hear others capable of, and can laugh heartily to see and hear them laugh.

CHAPTER II.

Voyage to New-York, to Halifax, back to New-York; redeem a transport-girl.



I took my first bias for travelling, or going to sea, from reading Robinson Crusoe; and, when I was little more than thirteen, sailed as a midshipman on-board a ship of war, bound with a convoy of merchant-vessels for New-York, in company with another frigate, bound to the West Indies, with a similar convoy; having orders to keep together until we arrived at a certain latitude.

The first night, after sailing from Spithead, and before one half of the merchant-ships were prepared, by stowing away the lumber they had on deck, securely lashing their boats and spars, &c. a violent gale of wind, or rather a hurricane, came on so suddenly as to put the best ships in the fleet in danger. Dismal, indeed, was this early introduction to a seafaring life. Having laid some months at Portsmouth, and from activity formed an intimacy with every mast-head and yard-arm in the ship, I conceited *myself half a sailor*; but, obliged as I was to

mount aloft in a dark stormy night, to assist in taking in the sails, my conceit vanished.

Our main and fore top-sails, being close reefed, were, with the mizen, all the sails we left set; the rest were furled with such dispatch as none but British seamen, well commanded, could have used. The danger from the storm alone, terrific as that appeared to so young a sailor, was comparatively small, to the greater danger of the ships running foul of each other. The continual firing of signal-guns of distress, from many of the merchant-ships in various parts of the fleet, without a possibility of our rendering them any assistance before day-light, added much to the horrors of the night. The ship which I was in received no material damage, **but day-light discovered the fleet scattered in all directions: five completely dismasted; several with the loss of top-masts; many, that had run foul of each other, much damaged and very leaky; and two, still more unfortunate, that were run foul of, had foundered, with the loss of several lives.** Affording all the aid in our power to those that needed it, and seeing the crippled vessels well into a port in the Channel, we proceeded with the rest on our voyage.

I have since often wondered at my having no sickness during this short, but heavy, gale; yet, in less than a fortnight after, meeting with another gale, nothing like so severe, I suffered all

that well can be suffered from sea-sickness, for the time it lasted.

Some of my brother-midshipmen, who were already seasoned, played their tricks with me and another youth, as raw as myself at sea, or rather worse, although some years older. This early suffering together drew us closely into the bonds of a long and firm friendship, that may have been equalled, but in some respects not easily exceeded. I recovered much sooner than he did, and then administered to him: which of the two was more gratified, I know not; myself in giving or he in receiving such aid as was in my power to bestow, for three or four days that he continued ill after I had worked round again; and this amidst the jokes and jeers of our mess-mates, which only served to make our regard for each other so much the stronger.

As I shall have occasion, in the course of these Memoirs, to speak again of this youth, I will attempt an outline of his character, as an eccentric one. — His education was far beyond that which I had received, of which I was very sensible. He was volatile and impetuous, strong in his affections, severe and relentless in his animosities, and eager and resolute, beyond the bounds of prudent bravery, in new undertakings; but he did not always possess that firmness and perseverance to encounter continued difficulties, so *essentially necessary* for ultimately succeeding in

great enterprizes. Liberal to profusion at times, yet subject to some unaccountable littlenesses: a scrupulous regard to truth, on points of honour, in all military concerns; but rather careless in relating matters for amusement: proud and haughty to those whom he did not well accord with, yet affable and complying, almost to submissiveness, with those whom he esteemed; but they were not many. The dislike he had taken to all our messmates, for their bantering during his long sea-sickness, he never attempted to conquer; and, conscious of his future independance, he thought himself slighted by the captain and officers, from their little attention to him during his illness. He was certainly a strange compound of strong natural parts, poisoned by early indulgences and bad habits as he grew up.

Our friendship was formed as I have mentioned, and grew with our growth. Notwithstanding he had such advantage of years, education, and command of property, as might in some degree have accounted for, if not warranted, his assuming a little, yet any stranger, to have judged of us by our conduct to each other, might have concluded that I rather assumed the superiority. In fact, he almost courted me so to do, and never seemed better pleased than when he could get me to shine, as he used to term it; treating me, in all respects, as a *favourite younger brother*.

I had been recommended to Captain R—— by a relation, who had formerly been his ship-mate: the captain put me under the care of Lieutenant L——y, to make a seaman of me, and he soon taught me how to take care of myself. On the captain or any of the superior officers shewing me any kindness, instead of my friend being any way jealous, as some of my brother-midshipmen were, he would express himself highly pleased; observing, that he could half forgive their slights to him for the notice they took of me.

It is not my intention to relate the common occurrences on-board a ship, although many of them might be entertaining to people on-shore: they would appear very flat from my pen, after reading Smollett, and will, therefore, form no part of my plan, unless I am particularly interested in any of them, or the singularity of the circumstance seems to warrant it.

Nothing material happened during our passage to New-York, except a smart brush with two stout French privateers, who kept hovering round our convoy a few days after we parted company with the West-India convoy. Our ship was French-built; and, as sailors say, sailed like the wind. Our captain, finding no other means of clearing the convoy from them, gave necessary instructions, to the captain of a well *armed and fast-sailing* light ship in the fleet, to

keep the convoy together; and the following morning, by break of day, having previously dropped a-stern and to leeward of our convoy, gave chase to the privateers. They bore away, keeping together for support: we did not fire a gun until nearly alongside the sternmost of the two, when we gave him a broadside from our starboard guns in exchange for his, without shortening sail, and of course shot a-head of him. They had both been firing at us with their stern chasers for a long time, without any injury but to our sails: after our broadside, the sternmost vessel did not fire another gun. The stoutest ship was a-head, and shifted her course: a short time brought us upon her quarter, when she yawed to give us her broadside, which did mischief enough to our sails and rigging, so as to give her hopes of escape, which she tried by hauling her wind to the westward, while the other hauled hers to the eastward. In about twenty minutes, however, we were along side: she had the temerity to try another broadside, in the hope of carrying away a mast or yard, and then struck, but not without paying dearly for such temerity. She was crowded with men, and our fire did severe execution among them: the captain of the privateer lost an arm. Had it not been for our convoy, we should certainly have taken the other also; but, being nearly out of sight of our own fleet, we dared not to chase

her. We had five men and a boy wounded, one of whom died.

In the afternoon, we joined our fleet with the prize; she mounted four and twenty guns and had one hundred and forty men on board, eighteen of whom were killed or wounded. Having been out a long time, their water ran very short; our passage was likewise very tedious, which, together with so many prisoners, brought us to a short allowance of water; and, for three days before we got in, having a foul wind, each man was reduced to one pint a day, which, in the month of August, on the American coast, gave me a true knowledge, not easily forgotten, of the value of fresh water.

We arrived at Sandy-Hook, with our fleet all safe, landed the prisoners, and took in water and fresh stock; on which duty being constantly employed, I had a larger share of refreshment and recreation on shore than any on board, excepting the captain and purser.

From New-York, we sailed for Halifax, in Nova Scotia. The French privateers, from the Gulph of St Lawrence, had been so very busy and successful in taking many vessels bound with provisions for Newfoundland, as to create an alarm for the island being distressed in the ensuing winter, if not provided for in time. We were ordered back, therefore, to New-York, to *procure vessels to load with provisions and convey them to Newfoundland.*

On our return to New-York, and while lying there for these vessels, I was again fortunate, in being much on shore to attend the captain, as well as make short excursions to Long-Island, which, abounding in fruit, together with the pressing hospitality of the people, appeared a paradise.

At this time, a brig arrived from Ireland, full of passengers, most of whom were to be sold as servants for a number of years, to pay for their passage. A market for selling men, women, and children, appeared so strange a thing as to induce my friend B—— and myself to go on board and view the scene. From breakfast, or eight o'clock, until noon, on each side of the vessel there was a row of these self-transported people, made as clean and tidy as circumstances permitted, with their faces towards those who came on board in want of servants. The price was fixed by the captain, the servants conditioning, as well as they could, for less than seven years, with their intended master or mistress; and those, who were not thought worth the price demanded for seven years, the captain was ultimately obliged to sell for the highest sum any person would give for that time. The greatest fear entertained by the purchasers (many of whom had emigrated in the same way) was of their running away from them when they became a little acquainted with the country. It

sometimes happened that an old settler, in search of a servant, and inquiring of the party what part of Ireland they came from, would meet with a relation; when, if females, they would set up such a cry and hubbadoo, with others that were in no way interested joining them, that the market was disturbed and seldom any business done until these dear relatives had agreed on terms; yet both parties strove to make as good a bargain as they could, and the old settler commonly had the advantage.

Having repeated our visits until we became known as officers of such a ship, we were rather startled one day at a nice black-eyed girl, whom we had joked with the day before, dropping on her knees when we came to her, and taking hold of both our coats. With tears in her eyes, she implored us, for the love of God, to release her from the situation she was in and take her to her mother. I believe we both looked very foolish and concluded she was crazy. However, she soon unriddled it, by saying her mother kept a large tavern at St John's, in Newfoundland, whither she had learnt that our ship was bound; assuring us, that, if we would pay the captain his demand for her passage from Ireland and take her home, her mother would gladly repay the whole thrice over, if required. I was a good deal affected, and felt very comical about it, my friend nearly the same. We were re-

lieved by the master of the brig coming up and inviting us into his cabin, where he told us all he knew of her, viz. that she came to him at Belfast in great distress, though decently dressed, praying him to take her to any port in America to save her from destruction. She told him the same story about her mother, and that, though she had been very wicked to run away from her, she well knew, as soon as she could inform her where she was, her mother would gladly repurchase her only child of him. We promised to see her within a day or two.

I felt a very Don Quixote in the business of relieving this distressed damsel, and B—— inclined the same way, but remarked the difficulty of obtaining our captain's permission, of whom he was determined not to ask the smallest favour. At last, we agreed to undertake her release as co-partners, provided the captain, whose permission I was to solicit, consented to her being taken on board.

On applying to Captain R——, he laughed pretty heartily at my credulity, well satisfied the girl was a jilt; and added, that, as to allowing her her passage in the ship, he neither could nor would. Our ship-mates, likewise, getting hold of the tale, roasted us both without mercy.

Notwithstanding all this, I was determined to accomplish her relief and convey her to her mother, *if possible*. Making inquiry among the

vessels then taking in provisions for St John's, I found a master of one of the schooners, that knew her mother to be, as she had described her, a tavern-keeper. I took him with me on board the brig, and, from farther conversation with the girl, was more satisfied and more determined.

The master of the schooner agreed to take her for a few dollars, and I acquainted my friend B----- how far I had succeeded; but, whether it was the bantering of our ship-mates, or some other cause, (for I was too much vexed to require a particular explanation,) he declined having any thing farther to do in the business. I told him it was very well, I would take the risk myself; but, as I had not the necessary cash, he must advance, as a loan, what I wanted. This he did, and I released my damsel; and never, surely, did a poor creature shew more gratefully rejoiced. The master of the schooner was with me and we took her immediately on board his vessel, lying in one of the slips near the Fly-Market and nearly loaded.

I believe B—— was angry with himself, when it was done, that he had retracted; for, as often as our mess-mates began to jeer me, he fought my battles with them, declaring I had more gallantry and generosity than himself and all the rest of them put together. They, however, still *maintained* that I should be duped.

CHAPTER III.

Sail for Newfoundland, danger of shipwreck, arrival at St John's, result of my Quixote-like purchase.



I HAD very little time to spare, after this, before we sailed with our little fleet; nor was I quite certain of my lass being on board the schooner, until the fourth or fifth day after sailing, when, being becalmed and on the Banks, in a thick fog, two of our boats were ordered out, in different directions, to look after our little convoy and give fresh instructions. I went with Lieutenant L—— in one, and had the satisfaction to find my lass safe on board her vessel. My friend L——, having thus seen and conversed with her, became a convert to the truth of her story, and, on our return to the ship, made more converts.

For several days we were thus becalmed, in a dense fog, and without an observation of the sun: our decks, however, were covered with cod-fish every day. The calm was succeeded by a hard gale, which sprung up right in our teeth, and continued, together with the fog, several

days; the sun seldom making its appearance, and never sufficiently for us to take an observation to be depended on.

We had lost sight of every vessel in the convoy, when a change of wind came in our favour and blew fresh: with this, we expected, by our dead-reckoning, to arrive at St John's in three days, and made sail accordingly.

We had been running all the following night under whole top-sails, with the wind upon our quarter, when, just at the peep of day, the quarter-master at the cund sang out, "Breakers right a-head, by God!" The lieutenant of the watch, instantly convinced of the lamentable truth, ordered the top-sail halyards to be let run and the helm put down to bring her head to wind as quick as possible, though at considerable risk of carrying away our masts. We were running so fast through the water, that, in a few minutes more, the ship must have been dashed to atoms on a hard iron-bound shore of perpendicular rocks.

It was my watch below at the time; but, so loud and quick was the alarm, that we were all upon deck in an instant, and I believe not one on board appeared in a single garment more than he laid down in. I had drawers on, which was more than many had; and in this condition we mounted aloft to close reef the top-sails, our *coursers set and close hauled*, though doubtful

whether any of our masts had received injury by throwing her in the wind so suddenly. Fortunately, they had not; so that we were able to carry a press of sail, with a view to weather a point of land which we discovered at day-break, as the only probable means of escaping shipwreck. We did weather it, but so very nicely that we almost gasped for breath as we passed it, expecting every moment the ship to strike and her whole company to perish with her.

We soon found that we were completely landlocked, unable to clear it on either tack, and the wind increasing to a strong gale; dangerous, under other circumstances, to have carried topsails. We continued still on the same tack, every eye in the ship on the stretch to descry any nook or opening for the chance of shelter, or at least some kind of beach, where, in case of unavoidable shipwreck, there might be some chance, though ever so small, of saving our lives.

For more than three hours were we thus looking in vain, and nearly hopeless. During this interval, the boatswain and part of the crew were employed in bending all the cables in readiness, when, on our lee-beam, we discovered an inlet, which, as we opened, appeared to run far in. Though still uncertain of our fate, we hailed it with joyful acclamations.

After a short consultation with his officers, our captain determined to enter, as the only probable chance of finding anchorage. With our coursers clewed up, we bore away and entered what proved to be a deep bay: we again hauled our wind, trading to and fro across the bay under our topsails, and sounding all the way as we thus drifted up. Finding a clean bottom and strong anchoring-ground, Captain R—— thought it more prudent to trust to our anchors and cables, though very much exposed to the wind that blew, than run the risk of going higher up the bay in search of better shelter. The gale increased to a perfect storm and continued for three days; with difficulty we rode it out, with three anchors and cables a-head and our masts and yards struck.

On the return of moderate weather, we were favoured with a good observation of the sun, by which we pretty clearly made out our situation to be that of Shoulder-of-Mutton Bay, in Newfoundland; and could only account for the great mistake in the ship's reckoning, by an uncommon strength and set of the Gulph-stream during the calm and subsequent gale while on the Banks, together with our being so long without an observation.

On the wind moderating and shifting a little, we worked out; and, clearing the land, bore away for St John's, where we anchored in safety

• **පැහැදිලිව**

1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 26

124

11. *Chrysomelidae* (10 spp.)

• **• • • • •**

2000

1. 1. 1.

• • •

[illegible]

1999

1954: 1

111. 2014. 04. 01. 00. 00. 00.

1000

— 6 —

ever, are not over scrupulous on such occasions, nor easily bantered from enjoying good things when set before them.

After the recent rough buffetings, every article was doubly welcome: we laughed, joked, and enjoyed ourselves; and the health of my black-eyed Susan, as they called her, was drunk in a bumper.

On going a-shore the following day, I took the first opportunity of calling: it was the only tolerable tavern in the place. My damsel flew to embrace me, and the old woman, without waiting for any introduction, clasping her hands about my neck, almost smothered me. She sang out a kind of Irish *pillalilleloo*; then, clapping her hands and applying them directly to my cheeks, held me as it were at arms length; and, while looking steadfastly in my face, called out, "Och! to be sure I shan't love the dear cratur so long as I live."

She repaid the money which I had advanced for her daughter, and wished to pay more; but at no rate whatever would she permit me to pay for any thing I had at her house during the time we remained at St John's; and, at our departure, sent a quantity of good things on board for the mess, which at such a place we should have been at a loss to obtain by any other means.

It may be necessary to explain here the cause of this young lady's absence from her mother

and being found in so disagreeable a plight. She had been tempted, by an officer, to leave her home and accompany him to England, where he forsook her. Friendless and unknown, prostitution seemed her only resource; until, recollecting to have heard her mother talk of relations at Belfast, in Ireland, she determined to seek them; and, in the hope of assistance from them, to get back to her. She took her passage for that place in one of the London traders; but her inquiries were ineffectual, she could find neither relations nor friends. In this distress, hearing of a vessel taking passengers for New-York, she concerted the plan which I have described.

CHAPTER IV.

Sail for Gibraltar, fall in with Admiral B—, a smart engagement, capture of a French frigate arrive at Gibraltar.



ALL on board were much pleased to learn that our captain had received instructions to sail, with all possible dispatch, for Gibraltar. It was late in the year, and the place was getting ex-

tremely uncomfortable from the intense coldness of the weather, although the wind was from the south-east, which detained us so long that we became apprehensive, lest, when the wind shifted to the northward, we should be frozen in for the winter before we could clear the harbour.

During this delay, we were busily employed in cutting and fetching spruce-fir on board, and in brewing as much spruce-beer as possible, for the use of the whole ship's company; the captain, officers, and all, drinking it in common.

The Newfoundland harvest, or fishery, being over, we shipped a number of Irishmen: they stiled themselves Holy Ghosters, and terribly wicked mutinous dogs they were; nothing short of extreme severity in discipline, and never-ceasing vigilance, could keep them in any kind of subordination.

On the wind chopping suddenly round, we sailed, getting out of the harbour just at dusk in the evening; by the morning, in all probability, we should have been frozen in, as the wind, settling at north-west, blew a complete freezer, and brought us next day to the goose-wings of our fore-sail, and at night to our bare poles. For several days we continued thus, depending much on the men at the helm to guard against the ship's broaching-to.

This was the quickest passage I ever made. *On the thirteenth day after leaving the harbour*

of St John we were off Cape St Vincent; the next day we fell in with Admiral B——, who had engaged and beat the French fleet, and was then pursuing the flying enemy, who were running for Cadiz.

Joining the chace, our superior sailing enabled us to run considerably a-head, and overhaul the three sternmost ships of the enemy; one a large two-decker, seemingly much crippled, with two frigates to attend her. The frigates dropped astern to engage us, seeing the distance we were from the other chacing ships. We ran close along side the leewardmost ship, and gave her an English salute; then, throwing the ship athwart her weather-bow, completely stayed her proceeding, as it was evidently intended by both to continue a running fight, two to one, while at such a distance from other support, or compel us to drop the chace. But Monsieur was mistaken, our captain was determined to fight them both if he could not make sure of one.

For a short time, we sustained both their fires; but, as the antagonist we had grappled with and our ship had lost their way through the water, his companion unavoidably shot a-head; and, before he could regain a situation to annoy us, our chacing ships were approaching too fast for his venturing to aid his partner any longer; he, therefore, boldly ran away and left him in the lurch. The Frenchmen attempted to board us

and cut away, by which they lost several men: it is due to them to say they fought most gallantly. Finding, at length, they could not disengage their ship, and that one of our seventy-fours was drawing near, the enemy struck his white flag and surrendered.

Old B—— complimented our captain for his conduct. R—— answered by observing, that, having formerly sailed under his command as a midshipman, he had profited by his constant practice and orders, never to waste or burn powder until near enough to singe his enemy's whiskers with the priming of his guns. Rough as the old admiral was, this was a compliment he could not be otherwise than flattered by.

We were now so near to Cadiz, that all farther pursuit was useless: gathering the ships together, we made for Gibraltar.

In this engagement we had six men killed and several wounded; myself, among the latter, by splinters that tore the outside of my left leg so unmercifully, as to make the surgeons doubtful of effecting a cure without amputation; but, a good constitution and good spirits aiding their operations, (which, in extracting some of the splinters, were frequently very severe,) I recovered sooner than was expected.

CHAPTER V.

Cruising up the Mediterranean.

AFTER lying at Gibraltar a short time to refit and refresh, and exchanging spruce-beer for wine, we had the admiral's orders to proceed up the Mediterranean, as several French privateers, from their fast sailing, escaped our cruisers and greatly annoyed the Leghorn and Smyrna trade. This was exactly to all our wishes.

We sailed with a roving commission, but met with nothing in our passage to Leghorn, where we put in for intelligence: we made a short stay, procured better wines, with abundance of fresh stores, and then proceeded to sea, eager to fall in with some of the rich French Levanters.

It would be tiresome and useless to give a regular detail of the ship's various courses and the ports which we visited for a few hours or days, as it happened, in the course of three separate long cruises which we fitted out for. Sicily, Smyrna, Zant, Cyprus, Alexandria, and St Jean d'Acre, we repeatedly visited; the little island of Lampadocia, likewise, served extremely well to lie by in.

Upon the whole, we were fortunate enough to pick up several French polacres; some valuable, others only worth ransoming for what little sum the captains or super-cargoes of them would agree to.

Such circumstances as appear worth relating, during more than sixteen months cruising in almost every part of the Mediterranean, I insert here, though not at all connected in point of time.

We had but one smart skirmish in all the three cruises; this was with a privateer, off Cape Bona. She sailed incomparably well, beat us in light airs, and rather out-rowed us with her sweeps in a calm; our boats were therefore all manned to board her, and we must have had a tight contest, had it not been for a breeze springing up when we were nearly within hail, while she was firing from her stern chasers, swivels, and small arms. Finding that she drew from us, and our ship catching the breeze, we returned on board; and, the wind freshening, at last began to overhaul her, and, after several hours chase, from day-light until evening, captured her just before she could reach Malta, whither she was flying for refuge.

At another time, we had a narrow escape. Having laid the ship to most of the night, at break of day three vessels were discovered about a league to leeward, but at some distance apart

from each other. We bore down on the largest, in the centre, who edging away considerably from the course she was first steering, and the other two ships continuing under the same easy sail, we concluded her to be a Frenchman, and a prize of course: but, day-light opening fast, we discovered she had a double row of teeth; and, the headmost ship then tacking, we deemed it prudent to haul our wind and make out what they were, before we proceeded to farther intimacy.

We were not long in suspense: having fired a gun to leeward and hoisted our English colours, our salute was returned, and all three displayed the white flag. Signals, also, passed between them, which showed they were in company. Putting the best face upon things, we fired a shot in defiance; and, making all possible speed, they immediately crowded sail after us. They consisted of two frigates and a fifty-gun ship: one of the frigates kept our way, and we doubted whether she could not have come up with us; but, as her companions dropped fast a-stern, she seemed a little bashful.

Having increased our distance sufficiently from the others, we bantered our neighbour by firing a gun and hoisting a small coil of rope at our mizen-peak, signifying we would give him a tow, and soon after shortened sail, to let him run up along side if he chose it; when, finding we

were so very civil, he hove to as if to wait for farther instructions from his commodore, and we proceeded on our cruise.

We were also hummed out of a small prize, by the master of a polacre, who declared he had the plague on board and earnestly requested us to take him and the Frenchmen out of his vessel, and give her up to several Turks he had on board, passengers from Alexandria to Constantinople. An officer, however, was sent on board to examine cautiously. I suppose he was over cautious: his report confirmed the Frenchman's assertion, and we declined farther intercourse with him.

He was met with by the *Fame*, privateer, a few days after, who, not being so credulous, captured and brought him into Zante while we were lying there.

CHAPTER VI.

In love, masquerades, the plague and consequences, dispute with the Turkish Bashaw at St Jean d'Acre, and with the French ships there.



AT Leghorn, during the Carnival season, I became intimate with a youth about my own

age, whose father and mother were French, but settled long enough at Leghorn to make my friend and his sister Italians. He was very desirous of making a short trip to sea, and I obtained permission of Captain R—— for his taking a cruise; but a master of one of our prizes, proving to be a relation of his father's, dissuaded him from his project.

On our return to Leghorn, in the richest prize we had taken, under Lieutenant L—— as prizemaster, I was continually solicited by his family to be there as often as I could obtain permission to go on shore; nor did I require much pressing, for his sister was more beautiful than language can express. She was constantly challenging me to dance or teach her English: I was soon over head and ears in love, and Signora did not appear much behind hand.

What the old people could contemplate by encouraging our being so much together, I never could discover, unless their object was to make me a convert to the Roman Catholic religion. I honestly confess, had they not taken the measures which they did, my devotion then was so strong to the beautiful idol I worshipped, that they, or rather *ma belle Signora*, might have moulded me into any form.

We were both very young and very foolish; but, as we grew older, our wisdom increased. She possessed a noble, bold, commanding, coun-

tenance, with a carriage and manner suited to an imperial diadem.

On my return from our third and last cruise, I was received by the whole family with increased partiality. In the course of the first evening, my adorable took the earliest opportunity that offered to converse apart, by inviting me to a walk in the garden, where, without the smallest circumlocution, she said she had to ask me a question or two, to which she depended on my honour, as an English Cavalier, for direct and distinct answers. "I do not ask if you love me," said she, "I know you do; but tell me, candidly and truly, does your sense of honour to your country and religion permit you to relinquish both, and, by marrying me, to accept of mine?" The suddenness and surprise of this double question petrified me, and for the moment drove away all considerations but those of my country, friends, &c. I soon recovered, and was beginning to pour out the ardent honest affection of my heart, when she stopped me, saying, "We have no time to spare: I understand your emotion as well as if you had been hours in explaining. Strong as I acknowledge my passion for you, Cavalier, I could not have made such a sacrifice myself, and therefore have no right to exact or expect it from you. I do not love the less, though I lament the cause; but *the past must be forgotten*. You must, howe-

ver, continue the same attentions to me, or I cannot answer for the consequences to yourself. I am older than you," she continued, "and know the danger of awakening any jealousy among my relations here better than you do. It may be difficult to both to maintain the appearance, yet refrain from the smallest excess, of love; but it must be done. Be easy on my account: if we do not betray ourselves, there will be no danger to either. We will now go in, hand in hand, and tell them we are going to favour them with a minuet: I will then challenge you to sing an Italian song, after my attempting one in English; and, if you do not recover your usual spirits sufficiently to stay longer with ease, make the best excuse you can for leaving us."

Language cannot convey an adequate idea of her manner while uttering this: none but an all-commanding beauty could have so enforced submission to all she said, without an attempt, on my part, to resist.

On entering the room, she observed, "that, as the poor Cavalier complained of a head-ache, she would not let me stay out longer in the open air; and, as a reward for my compliance, she had promised to sing me a song." With her assistance, I came off better than I expected. I would fain have been jealous, but could find no object.

At the next interview, she convinced me she was right. "Since your last departure for sea," she observed, "I have weighed and considered every thing concerning us. My mind was distressed by a train of uneasy apprehensions, and I determined, by an examination of my heart, to learn at once whether it were possible to love, live, and be happy, together. I found my love to be of so extravagant a cast, that, though satisfied of your sincere love for me, I should grow jealous and we should both be made miserable, if I ever discovered the sigh of regret for your native country or a lingering wish to return to it. I am, therefore, more reconciled now, and feel convinced, that, had you answered me according to my wishes and without the agitation I witnessed, although it would have gratified my love and pride for the time, I should not have been able to preserve the high opinion I entertain of you as an officer in the service of your country. Let us endeavour, therefore, to reconcile ourselves to that which appears irremediable, since neither of us can, with propriety and honour, give up country, religion, and connections."

There appeared so much truth and sound reason in all she said, that I did not attempt to combat it. It was agreed that I should continue my assiduities as usual, in which there was no *difficulty*: when by ourselves, however, I found

much trouble in submitting to the dictates of reason and propriety; but a single glance from her chastening eye produced its effect.

To her brother I had long acknowledged the fervency of my love for his sister, and I believe the whole family considered it as a settled thing, that would happen when we were a little older.

On our ship being ordered home, I told her brother that I felt myself too young to profess and apply seriously to his parents, until I had seen my own; that it would likewise require my obtaining leave, from the government of my country, to relinquish that service, with permission to enter the navy of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, (a subject that had often been discussed by us and pressed much upon me); and that, as soon as these matters could be ascertained and settled, I would write to him and his sister.

Being much in attendance upon the captain on shore, from the fluency I had obtained in the Italian language, I spent much of my time with these kind friends; but it was accompanied with deep regret on my part, from an anticipation of the result; and, had I not been convinced that her resolution was irrecoverably fixed, I know not how I might have acted.

The carnival season in Italy is so well known and described by abler pens than mine, that, *however highly I enjoyed it myself, I conceive it*

would be fruitless to attempt any thing novel on the subject. I entered most completely into the spirit of it; and, possessing a considerable share of vivacity, strength, and agility, I passed muster among the frolicsome youths tolerably well. At that time, an English naval uniform was a sure and pleasant passport into all good company, in every part of Italy: many of the natives, therefore, assumed the character under a mask, and I took no small pleasure in exposing their false colours, though it was sometimes attended with smart scuffles; but my little oaken towel, which I could handle pretty briskly when necessary, always carried me through.

While lying at anchor in the island of Cyprus, a Greek of some note, understanding we meant to sail for St Jean d'Acre, solicited, through the medium of the English resident at Cyprus, to be permitted to go with us. At this time, the plague was raging in most parts of the Levant, and his request would not have been listened to had he not been travelling to Jerusalem, whither our captain had a strong wish to accompany him, thinking the Greek's perfect knowledge of the country a good protection.

However, it was deemed a proper precaution to make him undergo quarantine. His bed, &c. were accordingly placed on the ballast in the hold, where (excepting two hours each day that *he was allowed to take air on the poop*) he conti-

nued the four days we were on the passage. We came to an anchor at St Jean d'Acre in the evening, and early the next morning the poor Greek was found dead, without having given the slightest intimation of his being indisposed.

No doubt was entertained that he died of the plague, and no time was lost in getting a rope round him and his bedding, by which he was hoisted up the main hatchway with the stay-tackle, and then boused over the ship's side by another tackle from the yard-arm, and cut adrift, with a weight to sink him.

The alarm and consternation, in the whole ship's crew, were far beyond what an enemy ever so superior to ourselves could have produced. A consultation was held in the captain's cabin, to consider the best means of preventing the evil from spreading farther. Iron pots and tubs were placed securely on the ballast in the hold, in which every strong smelling combustible or ingredient in the ship was set fire to, and all hands readily submitted to be shut down under the hatches; the captain, two first lieutenants, and the doctor, remaining on deck.

It was not long before some of us that were below, and at length all, began to complain, exclaiming to those above, "that we should be suffocated." This not being attended to, some began to be outrageous, but their strength soon *failed them, and numbers sunk down exhausted.*

My friend B—— and I had, at the commencement of the fumigation, gone down and turned in upon our beds; and, as soon as I began to feel the effects, which from the burning of tobacco appeared the most insufferable, I turned my face down on my pillow, scarcely allowing myself any other air than that which I drew from it. This it was, I believe, which enabled me to support it better than others; for, on the hatchways being opened, I was the first to get on deck, though I had further to travel than most of them. Many were obliged to be hauled up, being incapable of helping themselves; and poor B—— was not much better, (for I had to go down again and assist him,) which I attributed to the frequent opening of his mouth, when complaining so much of the suffocating effect. On my laughing afterwards at some of those that suffered considerably, they swore that I must have been born in the lower regions, and might consequently bid the devil defiance.

It was our turn next to give the captain, lieutenants, and doctor, their dose; which was done very liberally, the dead-lights, ports, &c. being first well closed. They were confined the same length of time; and, when set at liberty, came out, gasping for breath, in a pitiable state, which reconciled those of the crew that had suffered so *much below*.

For a long time after this, fires were made in the day-time in the hold, to burn pitch, tar, turpentine, rosin, vinegar, tobacco, &c. finishing, towards evening, with such aromatic gums and herbs as the doctor procured for the purpose. The decks were likewise freely washed with vinegar, and all advised to smoke tobacco and keep a bit of the leaf in their mouth and nostrils: the latter I found was not in my power, therefore I substituted in its place a little fresh oakum.

Notwithstanding all this, we had three foreign sailors who died of the plague, and in so short a time as to persuade us they must have had the disorder before the Greek died. Two of them were on the sick list at the time of the fumigation, and the other followed a few hours after.

Contrary to the accounts we had heard at Cyprus, we found the plague raging at St Jean d'Acre and along the whole coast of Syria, with the greatest violence. We made no longer stay, therefore, than we could help; but long enough to have a little dispute with the Turkish governor, or bashaw, arising from five French merchant-vessels that were lying there, most of whom had taken in cargoes of cotton and were ready to sail.

Through the French resident, they had applied to the bashaw, who was simple enough to send an order on board our ship, with directions not

to sail for two days after these French merchant-vessels had left the port.

It is right, however, to remark, that the French, at that time carrying on a considerable traffic at St Jean d'Acre, were well known and the English very little, which might induce the bashaw to treat us so cavalierly. Captain R—— sent back, by the same boat, a very spirited answer; and, there being no English resident to ensure its being faithfully delivered and translated, he read it aloud before he delivered it, making one of our Greek sailors interpret its full meaning to the Turkish officer who came off with the order, that he might relate its contents to the bashaw. The substance was, that, unless we were molested, all due deference should be paid to the neutral port we were in, (which, by the bye, is a wide open roadsted); that, if any of the French vessels should leave the port before we were under weigh, he would allow the usual time by the law of nations before he sailed after them; but, if our ship got under sail first, and the bashaw ordered any guns to be fired at him from the fort, he would knock his old castle about his ears and take or destroy every French vessel then lying there.

The Turk in the boat stroked his whiskers, looked very fierce, and seemed to swear most vehemently by Mahomet: on which, our tars *gave three* cheers and our captain ordered a sa-

lute to be fired. The whole together operated sufficiently to convince the bashaw that we were not to be frightened; and, in the evening, the boat came off again, to acquaint our captain that the governor was satisfied with his intentions respecting the Frenchmen. But not so the French themselves; they were fearful we meant to cut them out in the night, and therefore hauled all their vessels as close in shore as possible, and unbent their sails.

From the celebrity which this place has obtained since, in its defence by the gallant Sir Sydney Smith, with a handful of Englishmen, against the reputed all-subduing, but in truth the most cruel, unprincipled, marauder that has been permitted to harass this globe, I cannot refrain from observing, that, at the time we so defied the power of the bashaw, we really conceived, from the towering, Babel-like, ruinous, appearance of the place, that we could have executed what we threatened: but I now conclude we must have been greatly mistaken, which may, in some measure, be accounted for by the confined view we had of its strength, the effects of the plague, on board as well as on shore, preventing any close observation. Had I been called to give an opinion of its capability of defence, against any regular army, by a strong garrison, I should have answered, that I deemed it untenable.

It will not appear surprising that a youthful mind should at first look with a kind of reverential awe on places so much noted in Holy Writ as many that we then saw daily: Mount Lebanon, so famous for its cedars, of which produce it scarcely appeared to retain a vestige; St Jean d'Acre, the antient Acon, where David is said to have played the fool before the king of Moab; so celebrated, beside, in the Crusades. These places, with Mount Carmel and others of inferior note, became at last so familiar to the eye as to produce a complete indifference about them.

Dreadful as the whole of this coast was, from the ravages of the plague, I quitted it with a kind of regret, at not being able to visit Jerusalem, which I fully expected had Captain R—— gone thither.

CHAPTER VII.

Sail from St Jean d'Acre, fall in with and capture one of the French ships.



ABOUT ten days after leaving St Jean d'Acre, cruising along the coast of Egypt, we fell in *with one of the largest and richest of our French*

friends whom we had left behind, and captured him. He had lost several of his men by the plague, while taking in his cargo; nevertheless, after a tedious quarantine, we thought him a good prize, and so he proved.

The prize being sent for Leghorn, with my friend B—— on board, he had the captain's permission to quit her after seeing her safe in port, if he could get on board any British cruiser bound up the Levant, for the chance of falling in with our ship, as the several prizes we had taken had reduced our number of officers: foreign seamen we could get in most ports.

It was several months, however, before we saw him again, when he gave the following account of his adventures.

CHAPTER VIII.

Anecdotes of Captain Patrick.



THERE was a famous English privateer, at that time well known all over the Mediterranean; the *Fame*, of Bristol, Captain Patrick. She was lying in *Leghorn-roads* at the time B—— went

in, and was near sailing. Patrick was seldom out of quarantine, staying no where longer than to get water, provisions, or men, if wanted.

On being applied to, he gladly accepted B——'s proposal of doing duty as an officer, until they fell in with our ship. He was to go on board the *Fame* soon after dark in the evening, and the next morning they were to sail.

Patrick was a terror wherever he went, being little better than a madman, regardless of the laws of quarantine or the country he was in; there were but few places, therefore, at which he could latterly go on shore without apprehension.

Previous to B—— going with him, he had shot one of his guardas (a kind of revenue-officer put on board ships under quarantine) dead, for taking away the ship's jolly-boat to row himself to the quarantine-house, where he meant to complain against Captain Patrick for some ill usage. When Patrick was informed of his thus taking the boat, he ran on deck and snatched up a loaded musket, swearing at the guarda, that, if he did not instantly return with the boat, he would fire at him: the guarda persevering, he fired and killed the man.

Captain Patrick, being accountable for every one on board his ship leaving her under quarantine, would have been enabled to make a better *defence* for this, than for various other com-

plaints against him. He did not chuse, however, to take the chance, by surrendering for trial, as required. And as, from what he could learn, the magistrates did not seem to admit of such pleas, it is probable enough he was privy to the following outrage committed by his second lieutenant on the night previous to their sailing.

The *Fame* had a felucca-tender to accompany her when cruising, which, in calms and light winds, could be manned with fifty hands for rowing and boarding. As soon as the evening was set in, his second lieutenant, with about fifty of his men, took the felucca and rowed a shore, a few miles to the westward of Leghorn. Passing for the crew of another English ship then lying in the roads, not in quarantine, they were well received at a village, where they spent their time freely until midnight, when nothing would satisfy the tars, but they must have a lass each; and, as these lasses were at Leghorn and could not come to them, they determined on going to the lasses, as Mahomet did to a mountain.

Between twelve and one, they reached the city gates, desired the officer on guard to let them in, and on his refusal threatened to force their way. It appeared, afterwards, that the commissioned officer, who had the command at the gate, and should have been with his guard, had left it to the care of a non-commissioned officer for an hour or two, not suspecting any

thing could occur to disturb his post, the gates of the city being shut at night more on the score of civil police than of military exigencies.

The sergeant demanding their motive, they plainly told him what they wanted, and promised, if he would let them pass peaceably, they would return as soon as they had saluted their girls, and would give the guard something handsome to drink. The sergeant, fearful of a disturbance while his officer was absent, and thinking it an innocent kind of sailor-like frolic, admitted them. But the English lieutenant of the *Faine*, being apprehensive that he and his men might be caught in a trap, and finding himself more than thrice as strong as the guard, took possession of the gate by making the guard prisoners for the time. One half of them then went and had their ramble, returning soon to relieve the rest, and brought wine and cordials to treat the guard. The last party who went on this frolic behaved ill; for, not content with visiting the ladies, who are licensed and live in a part of the town allotted to them, called, by the English sailors, *Love-lane* and *Scratch-alley*, they drank cordials until they were half crazy; and, forcing some of the girls with them to the large square, called the *Place*, they gave such repeated English cheers as to awaken and alarm the whole neighbourhood. Before any knowledge could be had of *the cause* or any measure taken to apprehend

them, they retired to their companions at the gate; and, setting the guard at liberty, retreated with all haste to the felucca, and got on board the *Fame*.

Boats were sent off to all the ships in the roads, before day-light, to inquire for the authors: Captain Patrick, having learned the particulars, sent a note to the governor, owning they were his people, but that it was done without his privity, adding, that he had no control over his people while in their port and under quarantine, as they debarred his using force to prevent his boats leaving the ship. This was well enough for him to say, but all who knew Captain Patrick knew better.

At day-break, as the *Fame* was getting under weigh, another boat was sent off, ordering him to remain at anchor; but, knowing he had now completely sold Leghorn, he disregarded the order and set sail. The fort was then ordered to fire at him, which he paid no more attention to than the order; and, on a shot passing through one of his sails, he hove the ship a little to, returned the salute by firing three shot at the fort, and, with a brisk wind off shore, was soon out of their reach.

Complaints were sent to England, and the commanders of all the king's ships were ordered to take him out of his ship where ever they met with him; his letter of marque, authorising him

to make captures, was declared void, and instructions were given to the British consuls in the ports of the Mediterranean, to seize all the prizes he might send in, and, if he went on shore, to have him arrested and sent home a prisoner.

Two or three valuable prizes were thus seized in different ports he had sent them to; and, before any of our ships of war fell in with him, after receiving such orders, he had the good luck to be informed of his danger by the master of an English brig, who told him he had been boarded about three hours before by a sloop of war, under colours of the Duke of Tuscany, in company with another sloop of war and a two-decker, under the same colours, who said they were cruising for the *Fame*, in hope of making Captain Patrick a prisoner. The master of the brig acquainted him with the various instructions sent from England, and added, that the officer who boarded him was a dirty scoundrel, having plundered him of his best compass and other articles, promising to pay him when he met him in port.

Two of the captains of these Tuscan men-of-war were British, and had had such repeated quarrels with Patrick, when on shore at Leghorn, that an inveterate hatred subsisted between them: they rejoiced, therefore, when they received such orders. But Patrick laughed at them while *he had sea-room*, knowing that the *Fame* would

sail round them all, nor would he have hesitated at fighting the two sloops, though each of them equal in metal and numbers to the *Fame*.

Patrick inquired their course; and, learning they were under an easy sail, he pursued their track and made for them before night-fall sufficiently near to ascertain who they were. He continued overhauling them, under an easy sail, until between eleven and twelve, when, passing the sternmost to windward, he just hailed him in French, so as to receive an answer in the same language, and ran close up on the weather-quarter of the two-decker, the captain of which was his mortal antagonist.

Tuscany not being at war at the time, the ships were not in perfect readiness. Captain Patrick had hauled up his courses, and was every way prepared; hailing this ship also in French, he received a like answer; when, damning their French souls, he ordered them to strike to the *Fame*, Captain Patrick, and immediately poured a broadside into him. At the same time, putting the ship about, before either of the vessels could recover from so unexpected an attack, he re-passed the sternmost; and, with the same summons to surrender, he fired his other broadside into her, then making sail, and was out of sight before they well knew what was the matter.

Patrick was aware he had a desperate gauntlet to run through the British cruisers, but he like-

wise knew that few ships could sail faster. Keeping a wary distance, therefore, from all ships of size, he cruised until he took a rich polacre, which he unloaded at sea of most of her cargo on board the *Fame*; and, in his way with her to Tunis, he captured another, and took them both into Tunis with him. He there sold both their cargoes, and the *Fame* he sold to the Dey. To his officers and crew he gave up the two vessels that were brought in, to convey them where they liked, fitting them well out. He made presents to his officers and told them he would make over to them and the crew all his share of the many valuable prizes they had taken and sent into different ports for sale, both before and during this cruize, in lieu of which, he appropriated to himself the two cargoes brought in and sold at Tunis. And thus he settled all farther trouble about being caught and punished.

It was afterwards reported that he turned Mahometan; and, by another account, that he sent to Rome, and made sufficient interest to get the Pope's pardon by turning Roman Catholic. He must have made a worthy proselyte to either.

My friend B—— crossed over the Mediterranean, in one of those polacre prizes, to Zant, where the polacre and another of the *Fame*'s prizes were seised by the British consul; nor was it thought that the men or officers of the *Fame* would ever be benefited by any more of

the many prizes she had taken, than what had already been distributed and paid:

B——, making himself known to the British consul at Zant, was kindly entertained by him, until we arrived about three weeks after. His intention was to get on board the first English ship of war that arrived, which luckily proved to be the ship he belonged to. He was truly happy at rejoining us, observing, he was cured of privateering, though Captain Patrick had treated him much better than he did his own officers..

What has been here related is confined to the eccentric character and conduct of Captain Patrick; but, there were many other anecdotes told by B—— that amused us at the time.. Among them was the following:

The Fame had a very smart engagement with a French privateer of greater force in the Gulph of Lyons. They were known to each other by repute, and had mutually threatened to fight, if they should meet. But it is not the interest of privateers to fight for victory only; when, therefore, they did thus fall in together, an unavoidable brush took place, and several were killed and wounded on both sides. They separated and lay-to to refit, neither running away nor in a hurry to renew the fight; and, a calm coming on while at a respectable distance, they continued so until night, when each steered their own course and claimed the victory.. It was

during this suspense that the surgeon of the *Fame* went round to examine the killed and wounded, with a few seamen to attend him, in order to remove the latter down to the cockpit and throw the former overboard. It happened, in his haste, that he imagined one who lay severely wounded and insensible, to be dead, and ordered him to be thrown overboard. Two of his attendants were about executing the order, and were moving him along for that purpose. One of them observing, "here's lying Dick gone at last!" The motion and voice of his shipmate brought him to a little and he faintly exclaimed, "Jack, don't launch me overboard, I a'n't dead." "Why, you lying son of a b—h," says Jack, "who, do you think, knows best, the doctor or you?" And perhaps it was fortunate for Dick that the doctor, not being out of hearing, returned and sent him to the cockpit.

CHAPTER IX.

The Island of Lampadocia.



I OUGHT not to conceal a strange romantic conceit I entertained at one time to leave the

ship and turn hermit. This was at one of our visits to the Island of Lampadocia. There were no more than three inhabitants that we could find upon the island; two of them pretty antient. They stiled themselves Mahometan Religiosos, living there as hermits, but abounding with the good things they reared and cultivated. Their situation, full half a mile from the shore, was beautifully romantic; and their habitation was formed by a rude front, built up near the entrance of a cavern, and appeared to have other apartments besides the one which they only permitted us to enter. At a small distance opposite, they had another such place, but less, which was called their mosque, or chapel; in the middle of which was a large coffin, elevated from the ground, with lamps burning, and where they said one of them continually watched and prayed, &c.

Doubts arose in some of our minds whether they were really Turks, or whether there were not more inhabitants, and we particularly suspected them to have females concealed. Captain R——, however, gave strict orders that they should be in no way molested, and what poultry and fruit they could spare was paid for. They had a few patches of ground, inclosed by walls built with loose stones, where they grew corn and kept a few sheep that were in good condition.

All the island besides was a wilderness, with abundance of sheep, wild as mountain-goats. These were reckoned fair game to shoot or run down, in which sport our clothes and skins were well torn, and many laughable incidents occurred with the sailors. We got plenty of the sheep, but they were only fit to make broth of, having scarcely a morsel of flesh upon their bones.

CHAPTER X.

Adventure in Corsica..



WHEN ordered home to England, most of us quitted the Mediterranean seas, where we had been cruising so long, with regret.

On sailing from Leghorn the last time, we ran close in with Corsica, and were so long becalmed as to hoist our boat out and send it ashore for the chance of procuring live stock, eggs, wine, and fruit, though but few houses were visible.

I was one of the party. We landed in a small cove; and, leaving two hands to take care of the

boat, ascended a long sloping hill, at the top of which was a high stone wall, over which hung large clusters of tempting grapes.

We went on to the left, in hopes of finding an entrance or some house. There was no path-way, but we walked nearly a quarter of a mile until we came to a large old mansion, where we gave a loud halloo. Some women and children soon appeared; but, on seeing such outlandish figures as no doubt we appeared to them, they ran in faster than they came out. In a few minutes, however, two male animals made their appearance, in a dress nearly resembling what we may picture to ourselves of Robinson Crusoe and his man. They were father and son, dressed in jackets and a kind of short trowsers, made of goats skins, with the hair outwards, tied with thongs, and hanging rather loose. In a belt round their waist they had each a pair of large pistols, with a long snig-a-snee knife at their sides. The father had large mustachios, and the only things of modern appearance were their Leghorn chip hats.

As soon as the old man saw us, he exclaimed, "Ah! Signor God dam, John Anglis!" We soon became acquainted. He was a goat-herd and swine-herd, and frequently took his goods to Leghorn for sale; where, often seeing English sailors, and having become acquainted with their general character, he seemed no way displeased

at our visit, especially when he learned our errand.

We found we were too far off from any village or place to purchase wine, or any thing else but hogs and goats; and, not to go back quite empty, we went with him to bargain for a few hogs. His son went out and whistled a considerable number of them into a large enclosure; during which time, he himself regaled us with a flaggon or rather calabash or two of common wine, while every female and child in the house continued prying and looking at us as great curiosities.

We accompanied the herdsman, who continued equipped just as we saw him at the first. The grunTERS appeared familiar enough with him and his son, as they walked about in the midst of them, but they eyed and were as shy of us as the old man's family within doors; both looking on us, no doubt, as the strangest animals they had ever seen.

Having agreed for the price by weight, as they were, and pointed out one as about the size and condition that would suit best, we were not a little surprised to see the old herdsman take out one of his long pistols, and, cocking it, he instantly shot the hog dead, and his son as directly drew his snig-a-snee and cut the animal's throat across, so as to half separate his head from the body. The father, loading his pistol *again*, desired us to point out others, when we

nformed him we wanted to take them on board alive. Selecting such as we liked, they were separated from the rest and secured by a bass-rope, tying them to each other by one leg and by the snout. We agreed likewise to take the dead hog, on their conveying it to the boat, and by the weight of that to pay for the others. Examining the hog to see how it was shot, we found the ball entered just under the ear, and were told that both he and his son could as readily and correctly shoot any number of them.

We inquired to whom the long high wall belonged, and whether it was in our power to get any of those fine grapes we had seen. He said, the wall enclosed large grounds, belonging to a great signor, who was very proud and surly, and doubted whether he would part with any if we applied; and that it was a considerable distance round to the mansion, the contrary way to that which we had come.

As it would take up some time to get the porters to the boat, we resolved to try and set off for that purpose; but, coming again within sight of the luscious fruit, we thought, if we helped ourselves, it might save a deal of trouble, provided any one could be hoisted high enough to reach them.

Being as light and active as any, I was appointed the climber, and my ladder was formed thus: on *the shoulders* of two, that stood on

the ground, was hoisted a third, who with his arms rested against the wall. Climbing upon his shoulders, I reached the top; and, plucking such bunches of the grapes as were within reach, I dropped them down. Could we have been content with gathering them thus, by removing my ladder, &c. in all probability we should have escaped unperceived with our plunder: but, having hold of a stout branch of the vine, I made a spring and climbed to the top of the wall. The inside appeared more like a wilderness than a garden, but I could see various fruit-trees in all directions; such as oranges, pomegranates, prickly pears, figs, &c. with a great quantity of grapes; the latter seemingly cultivated at a distance from the wall and kept low. The few, that were against the wall, appeared to have grown there by chance.

Perceiving that it would not be difficult to get down by the vine on the inside, and up again, I acquainted my ship-mates with the prospect I had of the land of promise, if any of them were disposed to accompany me, by fetching a rope from the boat, the end of which I could fasten to the vine for them to climb up by on the outside. Two of them took what grapes I had thrown down to the boat, and soon returned with a rope.

In the mean time, I gathered and dropped a *considerable* quantity more; talking and laugh-

ing with my brother-officer below, of the advantage I should have if any beautiful dulcinea were to make her appearance and claim the assistance of such a knight, to relieve her from the durance of so vile a Goth.

The design was, for three more to climb over the wall; and, when we had thrown over as many oranges, &c. as we liked, to return and convey all to the boat, which, from the vicinity of the fruit-trees to the part of the wall we were at, and not discovering any thing like a building near, we concluded would soon be accomplished.

I had but just fastened the rope, when I heard a rustling kind of noise behind me. I turned my head, and discovered several of these Robinson-Crusoe looking fellows, creeping slowly along, bent almost to the ground, with each of them a cursed snig-a-snee in their hands. Concluding they would have to climb over the wall after me, I slipped down the rope in a moment: then, telling my comrades that there was a legion of devils at our heels, just broke from the herd of swine, we all scampered away like brave thieves, both ashamed and afraid of what we were doing. Hearing them shout, we turned our heads and were surprised to find them pursuing us, before we thought they could well have got over the wall. It was now the devil take the hindmost, or every one for himself.

Our boatmen, observing the chace, thought something must be wrong; and, while shoving the boat on shore to receive us, got the fire-arms that were in the boat in readiness. Being among the foremost of the runaways to jump into the boat, I snatched up a musket and fired it over the heads of the pursuers, who were drawing near to those a-stern of me: this very effectually checked their farther pursuit, and we found ourselves all safe in the boat.

Had we been acting in a right cause, we should not have run away until we had fairly tried our strength with the enemy; as it was, we plainly shewed how soon the bravest may be converted into cowards, by doing what cannot be justified.

We could now, in return, have driven them back and brought away the stolen property; but we recovered our wits with our arms, and, forbearing to fire when we could have made fatal execution among them, (though strongly called upon so to do by those who had been closest pressed by them,) we convinced them, by re-landing, that we were not afraid.

Soon after this, our swine-herdsman and son made their appearance with the hogs; and, joining our pursuers, after a short conversation they came forward, and every thing was explained to their satisfaction as a mere sailor-like, unmeaning, frolic. Yet they made no scruple of saying

they would have slain every one whom they could have overtaken.

We learned, likewise, that there was an old gateway in the wall, on the right hand, which we had not seen, by which they came so quick upon us. We farther understood that the discovery of our being there was by a vigneron, or vine-dresser; who, being much frightened at seeing me on the wall, talking in a strange language, crept away to give the alarm. Nor did they hesitate to say, that, had they been fortunate enough to kill one or more such heretics as the Anglis were said to be, their priests (as we understood afterwards) would have well rewarded them.

Making allowances for prejudice, we reconciled ourselves to intentions not executed; but, as we were the first aggressors, we gave the fellows a chequin, and not only had the grapes that were gathered, on which they placed no value, but received plenty of oranges, &c. from within the walls, which they cared as little for. The grapes in the vineyard were held sacred, all the rest their signor regarded not as to value, though he would punish with death any one detected in gathering without his permission. Yet they understood he was very favourably disposed to the Anglis, notwithstanding they were heretics.

We paid our friendly herdsman, and got safe *on board with a large cargo for little money*

CHAPTER XI.

Take a xebeque on our passage to Gibraltar.*



RUNNING along the coast of Barbary, we fell in with two stout French xebeques; who, on conceiving what we were, ran boldly down to us when a very smart action ensued. Plyng the largest vessel closely, she was obliged to strike her colours; and the other, hauling her wind, made off. In this engagement, I received a flesh wound in my left arm by a musket-ball.

We took our prize into Gibraltar, where we first heard of the death of old King George. We made but a short stay, being under strict quarantine from our foul bill of health; then we sail for the land of cakes and ale, after an absence of more than two years.

* Xebeck, xebeque, or even chebeque, or chebeck, are variously and indifferently used and given to the same kind of vessel, as they belong to the French, Spaniards, Portuguese, Algeris &c. &c.

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

1914

The first thing ordered was to sound the well; all was right there. The next was to try for soundings, but none were found with more than two hundred fathoms. During this, the gunner was called on the quarter-deck and examined as to the powder-magazine, and when any one was last there. He declared that no person whatever had been there that day. The first lieutenant was ordered to go down with the gunner and examine the magazine and all below, and I was ordered to attend them. We found every thing as it should be.

In the course of this search, the gunner, who was an old man, swore he knew what it was, and affirmed it to be an earthquake. This account, added to his being an Irishman, made us both laugh heartily at him, although our errand was not of a very laughable nature.

In making his report to the captain, the lieutenant told him what the gunner said of its being an earthquake, which created another laugh on deck. However, the old gunner was called aft and directed to explain himself. He said he was on board a merchant-ship, lying at anchor in the port, at the time of the great earthquake at Lisbon, in 1755; and, from the effect it had on that vessel, he concluded this to have proceeded from a similar cause. There was no denying the justice of this, yet not an officer on board could be persuaded it was probable; and, from argu-

ing upon it, we deemed it impossible, from the immense body and weight of water, more than two hundred fathoms deep, that any thing afloat on the surface could be so violently and strangely affected by the concussion of the earth beneath.

I have noticed the consternation that so strongly and generally affected all on board during the shock: the rumbling noise excepted, all was still as death. But, the instant that orders were given by the captain to sound the well and let the top-sail halyards run, the difference between the British and foreign seamen on board was remarkably conspicuous. The former jumped about as alert as ever, seemingly rejoiced to be recovered from the panic; while the other poor miserable looking dogs of Italians, and other Roman-Catholics, we had shipped up the Mediterranean, were most of them on their knees and some flat on their faces, crossing themselves as true devotees. Many of them were known to have repeatedly committed murder and every species of villainy; which sins, having purchased absolution from, they were hardened and wicked enough to boast of.

I remember one fellow in particular, who acknowledged the commission of seven murders, from all which he had been absolved by his priest. This very scoundrel, and others of the same stamp, as soon as they could open their mouths after the general panic ceased, roared

out most lustily to Saint Antony and other saints for help; nor could any thing induce them to move, until the boatswain, out of all patience with the most wicked reprobates we had on board, swore he had a saint would save and cure them sooner than Saint Antony or all the saints in their calendar: this was Saint Rattan, whose aid he and his mates invoked so heartily as to recover them all in a very short time; liberally and literally bestowing crosses for them to carry on their shoulders for some days.

We were far out of sight of land; and, when the wind sprung up again, some hours after we had been so alarmed, it was as foul as before. We therefore steered for the land; and, towards evening of the following day, met a Dutch dogger, the master of which informed us, that, early in the morning, he left the port of Lisbon, where, the day before, they experienced a dreadful earthquake, that had done considerable mischief on shore. The particulars he had not heard, being anxious to get away with his vessel, as she was loaded, and the inhabitants too much alarmed to attend to any thing but their own immediate concerns.

On remarking the time when they felt the shock at Lisbon and we felt it at sea, our vain reasonings upon improbabilities and impossibilities were obliged to yield to our old gunner's *experience of facts*. Wonderful, indeed, must

have been the concussion of the earth beneath the immense body of waters, to have caused so powerful an effect on our ship. It served us for much argument, the remainder of our voyage, whether what we experienced ought to be called an earthquake or waterquake; but we were not sufficient philosophers to decide the question.

In the British Channel, we again viewed old England; and with such sensations as those only can feel who have experienced a long first absence from their native home.

The exclamation of my mess-mate B—— evinced an eccentricity of character difficult to account for. I must premise, that he had been sent to sea by his father, on account of his ungovernable wildness at home; and, when last at Leghorn, had received a favour, from some of the ladies he had been acquainted with, that he had not gotten rid of: this formed the ground of the following exclamation, on first seeing the land. “By God,” said he, “I shall disappoint the old boy after all; for he sent me out as a *sacrifice* and I am come home a *burnt offering*.”

I wish it here to be understood, that I am not relating things as they ought to be, but as they were.

CHAPTER XIII.

Scurvy.

We were bound for Portsmouth; but, the wind blowing from down Channel, we ran into Torbay, where, no sooner was it known that we had had the plague on board, though considerably more than a year before, and had repeatedly been under quarantine since, than the country all around was so alarmed that no boats would come near us.

The only illness we had on board, of any note, was the scurvy: for this, after a tedious passage, the best remedy we could obtain for the people was vegetables and fresh provisions; and, finding no likelihood of procuring such relief where we were, our captain determined to weigh anchor and bear away for Plymouth, as the wind had every appearance of continuing to blow hard from the eastward.

Keeping pretty close in with the land, we were running under top-gallant sails, top-sails, and fore-sail; when, just a-breast of the Newstone and opening the ships of war lying in Plymouth Sound, our ship, then under an easy sail,

st unexpectedly, and to the astonishment of
on board, struck so forcibly on a splinter of
ck as to fill with water almost instantly.

All around the ship we found two or three
thoms of water more than was wanted, and on
e outer, or larboard, side very deep soundings.
uns were immediately fired and a flag of dis-
ss hoisted in our main-top-mast shrouds,
ich fortunately could be seen by some of the
ips in the Sound.

That the ship would be lost appeared inevi-
ble, within a few minutes after she struck.
ie hurry and confusion consequent is indescri-
ble: the number of foreign sailors we had on
ard threw all into disorder, at a moment when
lf-preservation became the law that superseded
other laws, but those which prudence pointed
t to the cool and brave as the best means of
ving their lives.

In vain were orders given to hoist out the
ats with care and dispatch, as the only pro-
ble way by which the ship's company could be
red. The ship was settling fast in the water;
d for a while it was doubtful to which side she
uld incline in sinking: the great depth of
ter to seaward created dreadful apprehensions
the consequence if she capsized or settled on
r larboard beams. A few of the guns were
a over to the starboard side, which possibly
ve *the turn in our favour*, and afforded some

consolation in the hope that part of the ship might remain above water.

The wind was now abated and the sea considerably smoother; but our hopes of escape, by means of the boats, were soon destroyed by the ungovernable haste of the foreign sailors, who acted like madmen: their violent strength, in attempting to launch the boats that were in the ship, stove and rendered them wholly unseaworthy, for they filled and sunk alongside. We had now only one small boat, which was towing a-stern at the time of our shipwreck, with a hull in her. A boatswain's mate, observing three Italians lowering themselves into this boat from the stern of the ship, followed and slid down by the boat-rope before they cast her adrift; and, being a resolute fellow, he assumed and took the command of the boat. Their intention was to have rowed away and landed were they could, regardless of those they left behind. The boatswain's mate very prudently cast the boat off, and, rowing a short distance, lay to on his own, a-breast of the ship.

The ship was now setting fast over on her starboard side, and our fate very uncertain. Orders were given to cut away the masts and endeavour to make a raft with the wreck, but they were attended to by none but the officers themselves and the best of our English seamen; for, in this short time, it was astonishing to see

the numbers that were rapidly proceeding to a state of intoxication and mischief. Many had continued below as long as possible, breaking into the captain's, officers, and ship's, stores, where there was abundance of wine, &c. Whole chests, half chests, and flasks innumerable, were floating about in all directions.

About this time, I saw Captain R—— whisper to the first and second lieutenants; and then, throwing off his coat, jumped into the sea with his gold-laced hat on. Knowing his courage so well, I was at first amazed to see him as it were desert his ship's company; but he soon made his design evident, by swimming towards the boat. The boatswain's mate discovered who it was by his iron-bound hat, as the sailors call it, and took him up. Taking the command and direction of the boat on himself, he had her rowed near enough to the ship to declare and explain his intentions.

The main and fore masts were now cut away, and it appeared as if the ship had done settling, leaving her larboard side, from her midships-aft, out of water. This was nearly all the dependance we had to save us from drowning, even those who could swim. I was pretty expert at this, as an exercise of pleasure; but, as the shortest distance to the Mewstone Rock appeared nearer three than two miles, and the wind rather against,

there was but a faint hope of any being able to save themselves by swimming.

It was necessary to keep the boat far enough from the wreck to prevent the men from leaping into and sinking her. The raft, that was proposed to be made from the wreck of masts, yards, and spars, could only be considered a *dernier resort* to save from instant drowning should the ship sink much farther down, or should flood tide overflow the wreck before the people could be conveyed to shore; for, the wind blowing rather off land, there was danger of the raft drifting out to sea. However, the off-shore wind favoured us one way, by affording smooth water and enabling the boat to carry more people.

The management of this arduous task, of conveying the whole ship's crew from the wreck to the rock by repeated trips, was undertaken by the captain. It may seem strange that he should begin to take those first that could swim. About a ship's length from the wreck, he ordered those who could swim, one at a time, as each was for, to drop into the water and swim to the boat, when they were taken in; but, if they attempted it without being so ordered, they refused and compelled to swim back to the wreck. When the boat had as many as it could safely swim with, they rowed to the

landing all but the captain and a lad, who together rowed off again to the wreck.

It appeared a tedious time to those waiting her return, more especially to those who did not assist in making a raft.

Two sloops that were coming out, seeing our distress, tried to work to windward to our assistance; but in vain, as both wind and tide were against them.

While our own boat was returning from the first trip she made to the Mewstone Rock, we saw five boats rowing out from the harbour and making towards us. This renovated our spirits; and the captain arriving with the boat, picked up a flask or two of Florence wine, of which there was plenty floating about, and refreshed himself and the lad against their arrival.

During the time that the captain made his first trip to the rock, some of those, who were sitting on the after part of the wreck, said they heard some of the captain's Canary-birds singing in the cabin; from this circumstance, it occurred, that it was possible to get in and save some of his papers, &c. B—— and I volunteered the attempt together: stripping ourselves, we swam to the stern; and, forcing the cabin-window that was out of water, got in and handed out a few light boxes, books, and papers, floating about: we also saved the two remaining poor

Canary-birds that were together in one cage, where the water had not reached.

On the captain being informed of this transaction, he was much elated, as one of the boxes and some of the papers were of considerable consequence. He then requested me to convey them to him in the boat, which I did, and was about returning to the wreck, when he told me to get in and stay with the boat. I observed that I was without my clothes and hoped he would permit me to return, as B—— and I had solemnly pledged ourselves to each other not to separate, but take our chance together. He then ordered B—— to the boat with me, but I returned to the wreck first; when, tying our clothes up in one bundle, we lashed our little *protégées* in their cage on the top; and, steadying the bundle a-float between us, we got to the boat and put our clothes on just as the headmost boat of the five came near enough to speak.

It was a captain of one of the ships of war in his barge; who, having discerned our distress, had rowed off to assist with other boats that were coming out: but, as soon as he learned who we were, he doubted whether it was not more than his commission was worth to take any of us in; for the report at Plymouth, from Torbay, was, that more than half the ship's company had died of the plague and the rest were dying.

The other boats arriving, a consultation was holden within hearing, but at a very respectful distance, what was best to be done. The result was, for the officers and crew of two of their boats to be taken into the other, and the two empty boats to be turned a-drift for our use, promising to stay by us to see if farther help was necessary.

We were still obliged to use the same precaution in taking the people from the wreck: those, who could swim, swam off to the boats; and the others, laying hold of the end of a boat-hook that was handed to them, dropped into the water and were hauled in. Many of the foreigners, nearly insensible from their state of intoxication and half-dead with fear and cold, (being the middle of March,) would have perished for want of exertion, if left to themselves. They laid down in the bottom of the boats, in spite of being trodden upon and kicked to rouse them to a little exertion, bellowing out their prayers to the saints to preserve them, amidst curses on the brave fellows who were really saving them.

After many hours incessant toil to such as looked the danger full in the face, we succeeded in conveying the whole of the ship's company to the rock. The evening was then setting in, cold and frosty, and no shelter on the rock, excepting a very small kind of watch-hut, that would not

contain more than seven or eight people to lie down close together.

Almost the whole of us were completely soaked with sea-water, and much exhausted for want of any other nourishment than wine since breakfast. A few wet sails were brought on shore at the last trip which the boats made, and this was all the covering we had for the following night, except the hut before-mentioned. Some chests of wine were likewise brought on shore, this benefit having arisen out of the bad conduct of those who had broken open the store-rooms below, whence some floated to the hatchways and some drifted away.

Indeed, in any other situation, the circumstance of the wine drifting away and passing near the boats that came out to our assistance, might have afforded much merriment, in seeing the men-of-war's men, in those boats, making sham kind of snatches with their hands at the wine as it passed by, without daring to touch a flask; their officers in the boats giving the strongest orders, with a vigilant look-out, to prevent their falling under the same laws of quarantine that we were. Yet I believe that the sailors themselves (judging from the curses they vented at their hard fate in not being permitted to embrace so inviting an opportunity) would have run all hazards of swal-

lowing the plague with the wine, and possibly some of them even envied *our* situation.

Excruciatingly severe as our sufferings certainly were during a sharp frosty night, yet our apprehensions exceeded them, for many expected to be nearly, if not quite, frozen to death before morning. B——'s clothes and mine not being so very wet, we continued upon our feet, walking about till all the rest had laid down.

The captain had fairly worked his other clothes tolerably dry, and his coat had been brought to him much the same. Those officers, who had continued with the wreck to the last, came also on shore tolerably well off. These, as many as could, occupied the hut. All the rest stowed, as well as they could, under the wet sails when it grew dark.

Observing a warmth to come from the hut, to which there was no door, B—— and I determined to take our station just on the outside of the door-way of the hut, and accordingly we spread a stay-sail, which we had secured, with our feet entering the door-way. This position, as to our feet, we preferred, because we knew that the North-American Indians, when hunting in the woods, and obliged to lie down on the snow, always lie with their feet to the fire which they make, as the surest means of keeping themselves warm when asleep; and to this measure we *were the more inclined* from the strong effluvia that

accompanied the warm steam which issued forth. From the complaints of all the next morning, we had reason to think ours was the most comfortable roost of any, though not a bed-of down.

The captain and officers within the hut were the first to stir in the morning, and I believe had the worst birth of any, being half stifled.

At day-light, the scene was gloomy, the prospect awful. A barren rock, tenanted by shipwrecked sailors, lying about in different groups, huddled as close to one another as possible in order to gain heat, and covered over by sail cloth, from which arose a steam equal to any I ever noticed from a hot-bed. The heat, thus generated by their bodies and confined by a thick wet sail, had brought them into a comparative state of comfort to what they were in when first lying down, half perished with wet and cold: it was altogether a strange gloomy sight.

On mustering, none were found missing. The captain ordered all hands to kneel down and return thanks to God for their preservation; mentally, or aloud, as they liked best, and as their various religions taught them. I believe I may venture to assert, that never did a congregation more unanimously and fervently join in an act of devotion, thankful for their preservation, and

earnest in prayer for farther aid, for the prospect still before us was awful.

Those, who first arose, walked silently away, in meditation, without entering into discourse until the whole had risen. The captain then made a short address, recommending patience and sobriety as the surest means of assisting ourselves and obtaining relief from others.

Provisions we had none, and we were doubtful whether any could be recovered from the wreck. Our greatest hope of this aid (and our wants became very urgent) was, that some vessel might be sent round with provisions from Plymouth. We knew ourselves to be in another perilous state from the exaggerated reports of our bill of health; and that, in attempting to escape by getting from the rock to the land, we should, to a certainty, be treated by the country-people as mad dogs, and shot or knocked on the head.

This was confirmed in the afternoon by a row-boat, sent to inform us that provisions would be sent and landed on a certain part of the rock the following day, when the captain and one person beside might appear there at a distance sufficient to converse; but that any attempt to leave the rock, excepting to the wreck and back, would be fatal. The revenue-officer, who came out with this boat, was informed of our very calamitous situation respecting provision, which it seemed they did not know or think of, as, from

the reports of the men-of-war's boats of the abundance of wine, they conceived we had some of the ship's provision likewise. However, we had not been idle from the earliest in the morning, until this boat informed us what we had to trust to.

One party scoured the rock to hunt for water which at last was found, drizzling gently from a crevice in the rock, but soon lost again. The first substitute for a reservoir was a hat, or a Dutch cap, then in general use among sailors; but, before the day was out, a good sized bason was picked in the rock beneath, sufficient to dip from. This was a great relief to us, as fresh water was infinitely more valuable than the wine. It was difficult to keep the men from fighting for their turn to lie down and drink.

The boats were well manned and sent off to the wreck as early as possible, to procure every necessary article that could be got at; provisions in particular. We found the ship had parted near the middle, with her head much sunk. Wine and oil we found in plenty, as it floated so readily; and every care was taken to guard the people from making too free with the former, or stomachs so completely empty.

We had sent the boats back to the rock on a trip, loaded with more sails and towing several yards, masts, and spars, with plenty of rope, to employ the people on the rock in erecting tents

they now returned with the welcome intelligence of a small spring of water, and brought off a few flasks filled with this most delicious of all liquors, the value of which is not known to those who never suffered by an entire want of it. The quantity was too small to allow of drinking it pure, though most desirable; it was therefore emptied into a tub that was floating about, (first rinsing the tub with wine to clear it from salt water,) and we were obliged to add wine, to enable every man at the wreck to drink nearly one pint, making two draughts, or rather sippings, which made it much more beneficial than swallowing it at one draught. How much did we envy those who had been on shore with the boats, and drank it pure at the spring-head!

While we were freighting the boats for the third trip, a cask was hauled up from the wreck by the boat-hooks, which, to our very great joy, contained Leghorn dollars, (biscuits, so called up the Straits,) infinitely more prized by us than if they had been Mexican, or silver, dollars. The head of the cask was soon knocked out; in fact, it was nearly burst by the swelling of the biscuits, which, notwithstanding their being completely soaked with sea-water, were eaten voraciously. It was not long, however, before some one thought of the sweet oil we had in such abundance, which, being poured over the soaked briny biscuit, when broken to pieces in a

wooden bowl and stirred up, furnished us with a dainty meal, which we highly enjoyed.

Understanding, by this time, that it would be nearly twenty-four hours before any provision would be brought to us from Plymouth, we dressed a proportionate part of the cask of biscuit in the same way, and sent it to those on the rock, where it proved equally welcome.

Being moderate weather, we gathered together articles of necessity, and returned early in the evening to the rock; where, notwithstanding the great relief received from the water and biscuit, many were disposed to mutiny, declaring they had better take the chance of being shot than starved.

A kind of canvas huts, or tents, being erected, sufficient to shelter us all, the old hovel was converted into a warehouse, where the wine, &c. was placed, and a tent, large enough for the captain and officers, fixed in front of the doorway. Fires were also made with the brush-wood found on the rock; and, having a kettle or two from the ship, wine was heated and served out, together with an equal share, to every man, of a few boxes of sweetmeat, or preserved fruit, that had been taken up from the wreck. Compared with the past, therefore, we laid in clover the following night.

Very little more could be gathered from the wreck the next day; and, soon after mid-day,

a large sailing-boat brought us plenty of provision. Our troubles now appeared to cease, and we did nothing but cook, eat, drink, and enjoy ourselves; regardless of what the people of the provision-boats related, that not a soul of us would be suffered to land and remain in England, but a vessel was to be provided for us to sail back again.

On the following day, our uncertainties were put to rest by orders, from the Admiralty, that a large French prize-privateer should be sent round to receive us, provided with what was necessary: on board of which vessel we were to perform quarantine in Yam-river, to the eastward of the Mewstone Rock.

A few days after this, a gale of wind from the south-west most completely broke up and dispersed what was left of the wreck. Some few of the chests, &c. that floated on her breaking up, drifted into Yam-river and were picked up by our boats; but more drifted on shore in our sight, whither we durst not go, though we saw the west-country men and women ready to pillage and plunder every thing they could lay hands on, in spite of the plague or any thing else.

I soon received letters from my friends; and, among them, pressing invitations from a near relation to quit the sea and live with him: having no children nor likelihood of any, he wished to adopt me for his heir, and fix me in

a business of considerable note, on the River Thames, by which he had already made a pretty fortune. This was too good an offer to be refused hastily, although I did not much like to quit the service I was in; I therefore answered, generally, that, when released from quarantine, I would meet my friends and consult.

From the circumstances attending our shipwreck, particularly having neither baggage nor clothes of any kind except those we had on our backs at the time, our quarantine was considerably shortened, and happy enough we were to land once more on good English ground; thus finishing my first voyage, or early Struggles in Life.

CHAPTER XIV.

Land at Plymouth, decline a promising good offer to live on shore, to sea again, at the attack of the Havannah and re-taking of Newfoundland.



B——, myself, and another young man, agreed to travel homeward together. Our appearance was much against us when first entering

an inn, our clothes being both ragged and shabby; and, had we not made trowsers for ourselves from some of the ship's sails, we might have been taken for heathen philosophers, as our posteriors would have been seen through our pocket-holes. All this we laughed at; and, having obtained a supply of cash from our agents, we determined to travel to London as we were, with the addition of linen, which we soon provided. A post-chaise served us all; we made no haste nor abridged ourselves of any enjoyment on the road. At parting, B—— and I renewed assurances of friendship.

Not long after my return home, by the advice of my father and mother, I consented to live with her brother. I soon discovered that he and his wife did not agree very cordially; and, after unhinging my mind from my original pursuits, by an unprofitable waste of time, (except gaining local knowledge of the river and port of London,) I determined to relinquish all the golden promises that were to be realised by a continuance in a mawkish routine of business, no way suited to my love of adventure.

The frigate I was appointed to was ordered to the West Indies, where we joined the fleet under Admiral P—— at the attack of the Havana; but, before the place fell, we were sent off to Halifax, in Nova Scotia, when I was removed to the N——, under the command of Admiral

Lord C——, whose first lieutenant was my near relation. A braver fellow or better seaman, I believe, than my relation D——le, never stepped between the stem and stern of a ship, nor one more generally known and beloved throughout the navy. I was ambitious, therefore, of serving under him.

We had not been long on this station, before we were ordered on an expedition, the re-taking of Newfoundland, which the French had possession of. A grand point to be obtained was the safe landing our troops: Lieutenant D——le had the charge and care of this duty; I attended him, and the whole was performed with such celerity and good order as soon ensured success.

My old landlady at St John's was dead and her daughter married away.

The admiral could do no less than report handsomely of my relation's conduct, in his dispatches home; but, instead of sending D——le with these dispatches, an honour which he was entitled to, and from which he would have received promotion, a young lieutenant was sent with them, who had no more pretension to it than myself. This and various other circumstances opened my eyes as to any thing that was to be expected without interest; yet I loved the service itself, and continued in it until the peace following, when, with many more, of longer

service and greater deserts than myself, I was again cast adrift in the world.

CHAPTER XV.

Employed on a shipwreck.

THE relation whom I had left was at this juncture employed, by his brother-underwriters at Lloyd's, to go down to a very rich ship, the *Bien Aimée*, lost near the buoy of the Spaniard, off the Isle of Sheppy. He wished me to accompany and aid him in recovering what could be saved of her cargo: this suited me well.

We went and examined the wreck. She had been sadly plundered by boats of all descriptions from Whitstable, Feversham, Queenborough, Sheerness, &c. and by people on shore, at the Isle of Sheppy and elsewhere, wherever the packages drifted on her breaking up.

Having been round to all these places, and advertised salvage to be paid for all that would be delivered up, I was left to manage as well as I could. I made Sheerness my head-quarters, where they were paying off and dismantling se-

veral ships of war, to be laid up in ordinary : the place was therefore all alive, and for the time it lasted I liked this undertaking well enough.

In the progress of it, I was witness to some curious scenes. . The outer package of a box of jewellery being found on the beach, it was certain the articles were in the possession of some person who had no intention to deliver them up : it was valued at three thousand pounds. Search-warrants were executed, and in every house that was searched, throughout the island, considerable quantities of articles were found, brought from the wreck; and, among others, in the clergyman's house at Minster. The information against him was laid by a miller, whom he had threshed upon the shore, for disputing the possession of a packed cask, with bottles of green and yellow usquebaugh; when the parson, gaining the victory, obtained the prize with two fine black eyes in the bargain.

His and many other houses were half stowed with liquors of every description, cheeses, hams, &c. haberdashery in great abundance, and variety of broad cloths, linen-drapery, hardware of all sorts, hosiery, hats, a few common silver and metal watches, with articles of almost every kind, except the jewellery; *that* was never found.

The plunder was very great; much was recovered but much more lost. The spirit for plunder seemed to pervade all ranks living near the

shore, and all other labour ceased the day following a gale of wind. Men, women, and children, were on the shore, looking out for articles, which they deemed their own property as soon as they touched or moved them; and of course numberless quarrels and battles ensued.

A faint idea of this all-prevailing spirit may be gathered from the following little circumstance. I was riding towards the east end of the island, and, coming to a cross way, was uncertain of my road; but, hearing some one threshing in a barn, I rode up and inquired of the man which of the roads would take me to a public-house I wanted, the sign of the "Sloop a-ground." The man stared; and, asking what I said, I repeated that I wanted to be shewn the way to the Sloop a-ground. "Ha!" said the fellow, "another ship a-ground!" and, jumping over the hatch-boards of the barn-door, ran away to the shore without another word.

This employment over, I was at a loss which way to turn myself, when my relation again tried to persuade me to follow his business; but nothing short of active adventure could, at that time of life, satisfy me. The rebuffs which I had already received from Fortune rather increased than diminished my thirst for travel, yet it was difficult to know what course to steer.

CHAPTER XVI.

A trip up the Baltic; a present from Sir George Macartney to Lord Holland; a pleasant frolic at Holland-house.



THE Russian service began to be talked of, as well suited for young men, who, at the close of the war, being discharged from the navy, became in a manner destitute. A short summer's trip up the Baltic soon satisfied me that service would not do. It was not mere bread I wanted; that I could have had at home with my relation. It was a more difficult appetite I had to satisfy, which my growing strength, spirits, and activity, induced me to think I possessed the power to gratify: the more extravagant and romantic, the greater the temptation, and I considered it a heavy misfortune that nothing of the kind offered.

Sir George Macartney was then ambassador at Petersburg: he sent home a present to Lord Holland of some large Russian sheep and a carmuncle tent. Being entrusted with the delivery, I went with the tent one day and a few days after I likewise delivered the sheep at Holland-house.

On my first visit with the tent, I had been so pleasantly entreated to dine at the second table with the steward, butler, cook, Mrs Housekeeper, my lady's gentlewoman, and his lordship's gentleman, &c. that I had no inclination to refuse. It was the best served table and the best attended to I had ever seen. We seemed mutually pleased with each other; they, in their inquiries after the strange things I had seen abroad, and myself in relating what I had or had not seen, according to the bent of their questions. Nor can I, in truth, deny that some of the articles were a little embellished.

Among other questions, I was asked what a carmuncle tent was; which, not to appear ignorant, although I had never seen one fixed, I gave some extravagant account of, in terms they could not well understand; and, unfortunately, to a question, if it was easy to set up, I had answered, "yes; no difficulty at all to those who have seen them." Now this, which was said in innocent gaiety of heart, proved a terrible breeder of lies; for, when I went again with the sheep, the steward was very happy to see me, saying his lordship would be greatly obliged to me to put them in a way to set up this curious tent, he, Mr Steward, having informed his lordship that I was perfectly acquainted with the nature of those tents, which I had described.

✓ most magnificently to him and others the day I delivered it.

I confess that, at the first, I was no way displeased at the invitation, considering it as a pleasant adventure likely to afford me much novel amusement; and I vainly conceived it a matter of no difficulty, thinking any sailor, in spreading it out, would soon make out the clews from the carings, with all its bracings, bowlines, &c. I therefore promised to do my best to oblige his lordship.

In the course of the day, however, I understood that several tent-makers had been sent for, but declined the undertaking. I began then to think I had overshot my reckoning; but it was too late to retreat, without retracting all the white lies I had uttered. This I could not do, and determined to bustle and fight through my difficulties as well as possible; seriously resolving to myself, that, once clear of this, I would never risk hampering myself again with the charms of such innocent-looking fibs.

On my return home, a thought occurred which I put in train the next day, by going to the Tower, where I inquired among the old soldiers for those who had done duty on the continent, and if any had ever seen such a kind of tent. I was fortunate enough to find an old firelock, who said he had; and, provided I could

procure leave of absence for him and a comrade, we felt assured of being able to accomplish the setting it up. This I readily procured from Lieutenant-Governor R——d, whose son and I were old school-fellows. I promised my men good living while there, and, if they succeeded, to pay them well; but they must appear to take their instructions from me.

We were three days about it, nor do I remember spending three days and nights much pleasanter. Our table, (meaning the steward, butler, &c.) was spread with every dainty that could be had, better I am persuaded than his lordship's was in general; and, had I been disposed to remain with them three months instead of three days, I might have lived in clover all the time; but I had just enough of high life below stairs while pitching my tent.

On the second day, his lordship had company; some of whom, notwithstanding the rain, ventured before dinner, with the young lord and his brother Charles, to view such part of the tent as was erected. By their questions, I soon perceived they were attempting to quiz me; but, getting my sailor-like tacks on board, they found a tolerable match, and, Mr Charles taking part with me, the young lordlings had salt eel for a relish.

After dinner, I had a message from his lordship to know, as the rain prevented the company

from going out to see the sheep, whether I thought any of the sheep could be brought to visit them. This exactly suited my humour, and I said certainly, they were quite harmless, though so very large, provided some one they were acquainted with accompanied them. Being requested so to do, I selected a very high and large horned ram, with one of the ewes. These were obliged to be dragged and forced up the broad stair-case, to the great annoyance of the footmen's fine white liveries, who swore pretty roundly, while they were pushing them up, to find the pitch and tar, which the poor animals brought with them from the ship, take so strong a liking to their garments. Nor was their displeasure much lessened, when I observed that none of them knew how to swear, and that I would engage to bring a boy, who had not been more than a year at sea, that should beat them all, if they could not swear in a less clumsy and lubberly manner. This stopped their swearing a little, but not their grumbling.

Having borrowed a good strong line, I fastened it round the horns of my ram before I entered the room with them; and, taking a silk handkerchief from my pocket, put it loosely round my neck, to sailorise myself as much as possible. Thus equipped, I entered as master of the ceremonies to introduce my two *Russians*. Questions out of number were asked from

ll parts of the table; but, keeping my eye on the compass of her ladyship's countenance, I leered a steady course by answering her questions only; except when his lordship deigned once or twice to turn half round to me, with some sager inquiry, to all which I found no difficulty, except that of keeping a serious countenance.

Some one of the company then called out, "Sailor! what say you to a glass of wine?"—"With all my heart," I answered. I believe it was done by a wag to try me, for which I was in excellent cue, being resolved from the first to maintain my character as a careless free and easy sailor. A bumper was brought me; when, taking hold freely, I gave my arm a sweep of ninety, and, looking towards my hostess and the ladies near, I gave aloud, as my toast, "The Land of Beauty, and may the Fair never want British tars to protect them." It was received with glee, and "Well done, sailor; well done, Jack," echoed all round the table, until his lordship observed it was a fair challenge, and ought to be accepted by every man there. Their glasses were filled accordingly, and mine also by her ladyship's orders, who, with a smile, said to me, "I am sure you have no objection to it a second time."—"No, my lady; a sailor never thinks he can have too much of a good thing."

I was then asked, by his lordship, if there were any other properties in the sheep besides those which had been noticed. They had not remarked the uncommon size of their tails, I observed, which were as broad and as long as the flaps of their coats, and some inches thick of a fat as rich and good as marrow. At the same time, capsizing the animal about, so as to bring his stern in full view of the company, and straddling across his back, I hauled his immense tail strait up, exhibiting the gentleman's hinder parts to advantage. A roar of laughter ensuing, I dropped the curtain; when one of my quizzing morning visitors, rising from his chair, came as he said to examine the tail more accurately; and, lifting it up again, he was prying about; when, intending to make the animal start forward from under me, I gave him a sharp pinch with my knees in the loins, which produced so unexpected an explosion as overthrew all my predetermined gravity in an instant; and I must have laughed as loud as the company, had I not, by a second pinch, made him shoot a-head suddenly, affording me an opportunity to fall and thus claim a share of the general laughter with my officious fellow-exhibitor. The poor affrighted Russian, finding himself at liberty, scampered to the end of the room; and, turning his head round to the attending servants, stamped with his foot so re-

olutely as to make them shy of approaching him, until, recovering my legs, I went to their aid and took him again in tow.

Lord Holland, concluding the company had been entertained long enough with the exhibition, thanked me very courteously, and I withdrew with my retinue of four and two footed animals, leaving the noble company convulsed with merriment, unless my volunteer aid-de-camp was an exception.

My friends at the second table were no way behind hand in enjoying the above-stairs frolic, especially when the cause of the explosion was explained to them.

On the following day, we finished setting up the carmuncle. Of its being done completely as it ought, I had my doubts: it was an intricate piece of work, and the parts did not appear to fit quite well; but, as no one was there to find fault or that could do it better, I came away with flying colours.

At parting, I promised what I then meant to perform, that, on my return to England, from a voyage in contemplation, I would pay such hearty messmates another visit. And, more than twelve years after, being at Sadler's Wells, I was accosted by the butler, and good-naturedly reproached for non-performance. I then wondered at his remembering me so well, and often since

CHAPTER XVII.

Voyages in the merchant-service; a duel.



It would be tiresome to detail a variety of common-place adventures in the course of my voyages I made, in merchant-ships, to different ports in America and the West Indies. No opportunity tempted me to try many, but in none could I find sufficient inducement to continue.

The only mercantile-shipping employ, to which I conceived I might be reconciled to, was in the Mediterranean; but both fear and shame deterred me from making the attempt. I was

reside in England, whenever our marriage might take place; which, by reason of my youth at that time, would necessarily be some years first. This was what she had desired me to write.

From the angelic girl I received an answer, containing only six words besides the initials of her name; they are deeply engraven on my heart: with a postscript, advising me never to trust myself in Italy again. This was partly explained by her brother's letter, by which I found all her friends were much enraged. I likewise felt ashamed of appearing in a mercantile situation, where I had figured away in a naval uniform.

I must here acknowledge, that, although I began these Memoirs with what I thought a firm resolution not to hesitate in relating whatever had occurred, however repugnant it might appear to truth and common sense, I have detected myself in withholding a foolish mad-headed circumstance, merely because it might sound incredible. I was grossly affronted, in a public company at Jamaica, by a toast, most pointedly given for the purpose: I requested permission of the chairman to decline it: the author persisted in his right, after the chairman and others had drunk it, during a momentary absence of mine. The chairman and company in general, not conceiving it was of such importance as my antagonist knew it was to be, ordered me to drink it. Naturally impe-

tuons when taken off my guard, I instantly determined, and, taking up my glass, said to the chairman, "Sir, I bow to the laws of social drinking in obeying your orders; the result must take its chance." I drank it, then *bit* off part of the bowl of my glass, chewed it with my teeth and spit it full in the author's face across the table.

It may appear incredible, but I was actually not injured in the smallest degree, neither was my antagonist, from the glass. I begged the company's pardon and withdrew, with a hint that could not be mistaken. We met at daylight the next morning; he preferred sword and I ran him through. I crossed the island and lay incog. at a planter's until he recovered. On my return, he wished to see me: I went, where he sincerely requested my forgiveness and took the whole blame on himself.

This was the only duel I was ever concerned in as the challenger, and I was truly sorry for particularly so from the ungovernable, foolish, spiteful-like, heat I was first thrown into.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Meet with my old shipmate; carry a challenge from him to his former commander; obliged to fly; overtaken and cooped up in Dover Castle.



COMPLETELY disgusted with the mercantile shipping, no temptations or offers were sufficient to induce a continuance. On my return home, I met with my old ship-mate B——. He had been master of a merchant-ship in the Portugal-trade, but found that would not suit.

We found ourselves nearly in similar circumstances; but his were the worst, being in debt, and having a violent quarrel with his father, (who refused advancing him money). He was involved also in so serious an altercation with his last commander, while in the navy, as to be obliged to request me to be the bearer of a serious note to him. On delivering the same, and its being read, I was asked if I knew the contents; to which an affirmative answer being given, his lordship said it was very well, it required no answer from him.

Returning to B—— at the Admiralty Coffee-house, and communicating what had passed, it was not long before we saw his lordship pass and stop at the Admiralty-Office. Guessing what his errand might be, B—— requested a brother-officer to go thither and learn what mischief was hatching. We were soon informed that a complaint was lodged against us both, and in all probability warrants would be soon issued for our apprehension. To avoid which, we immediately took post-chaise to Dover, intending to cross the channel to France: but it unfortunately happened that poor B—— was indebted to a tradesman there, who, hearing of his arrival at the inn, and concluding, from our eager inquiries about the packet's sailing, that B—— was flying from his creditors, had him arrested and taken to Mr J——-ts at the Castle.

I accompanied my friend, and, finding the governor well disposed to make the quarters agreeable, I took up a voluntary abode at the Castle with him. Being no way sparing in our expenses, we passed away a few days and nights as pleasantly as heart could wish and my only regret was the loss of my friend's liberty. The governor was one of the most extraordinary characters I ever met with. His morality, which was extravagantly eccentric, he would justify by texts from Scripture, with a volubility of argu-

ment that might have puzzled better casuists than we could pretend to be; and we must have possessed a wonderful self-denial to attempt it. He had a large and beautiful family: the daughters were lively and frolicsome as May, and such noble disputants that contention with them was in vain; we submitted of course.

On the third day, when things were in train for settling the arrest, we were rather more vexed than surprised at being apprehended by some gentlemen who had taken the trouble of tracing and following us from London. Knowing it was useless then to settle the other arrest, I accompanied the gentlemen back to town the following day, when I soon got bailed. The governor brought my friend up and lodged him safely in the Fleet, where, purchasing a knowledge of the Rules, he lived unmolested for some months, his father still refusing to assist him. The fracas with his lordship was made up by his making the *amende honorable*, which likewise released me.

CHAPTER XIX.

A visit to the Savages in North America.

WHILE B—— was thus busily but quietly engaged in arranging matters with all his friends, I recollected a half promise I had made nearly twelve months before, when in America, to meet some Indian chiefs, who came annually to receive presents from government; and with whom I had ingratiated myself so much, by frequent familiar conversations about their country and mode of living, as to receive most pressing invitations to accompany them back, which I felt much inclined to accept. I therefore gave a kind of promise to meet them that time twelve month, if possible, but that I must cross the Great Belt first.

Remembering this in time, and nothing more suitable to my roving disposition being in view, I made what little preparations I thought necessary and returned agreeably to the appointment; and, when my Indian sachems understood I had re-crossed the Great Belt of Waters purposely to meet them, they appeared terrifically wild in *their savage gesticulations of satisfaction.* By

the interpreter, I soon learned a few common general words and wrote down many more to take with me. I only agreed for liberty to return when I liked, to which they seriously pledged themselves.

Learning pretty nearly what I had to encounter, I equipped accordingly; the spirit of enterprise reconciling me to every difficulty and danger I might have to engage with. It will be unnecessary to furnish a detail of uninteresting matter, relative to a tedious fatiguing journey, in which, however strong and active I had flattered myself with being, I found the Indians much superior. However, they had patience to bear with me, and I perseverance to continue it; until habit gave that tone to my nerves which enabled me at length to endure and accomplish what otherwise I never should have been equal to.

Of this Indian frolic, (for it can be considered in no other light,) I have nothing wonderful to relate. On joining their tribes (the Oneidas and Tuscaroras,) I was received with an openness that insured the fullest protection and friendship, and I was given to understand that the confidence I had reposed in them should not be forfeited.

The short time I remained with them, was chiefly occupied in endeavouring to understand the ideas and manners of men in the crude savage state of nature. I accompanied them in their

hunting parties, through the wilderness and woods, and in their fishing parties on Lake Ontario. Once I saw the Falls of Niagara; but, straitened in point of time and expecting to visit them again, I did not gratify the whole of my curiosity.

I began to be tolerably expert and to receive praise for my exertions, so that in time I might have made a tolerable good Indian. In running and climbing, the young Indians beat me hollow; but in wrestling I was an over-match for most. In throwing, I had no kind of chance with them, but with single stick I surprized them all with the management and exercise.

A few trinkets I took with me gained the hearts of several young squaws; but, whatever may be said about the indifference of savages in their love to women, I found the jealousy of two young Indians, in respect to the squaws they were courting, was not to be jested with. One of the lasses warned me to take care of the Indian who followed her, or he would do me mischief; and I was repeatedly asked by those I had first accompanied whether I designed settling with them, in which case, every thing would be done to make me happy; but, if that was not my intention, they recommended me to leave them soon and with secrecy, as some of the young Indians began to threaten me, which nothing but my determining publicly to fix and

marry among them could pacify; and, though they should be sorry for my leaving them, they had better consent to that than have a greater sorrow to lament.

Having been nearly four months among them, my curiosity was completely satisfied, and I was rather glad of an excuse for quitting them; but I could not agree to go away secretly, observing that I came openly and without fear, and so I would return; that, if any owed me ill will, they must declare the cause; and, if I did not clear myself to the satisfaction of the elders, I would abide their decision or meet my enemy openly; but that I could not steal away as if afraid.

It was at last settled that I should publicly declare my intentions of returning, and request guides. This was done, and two of my old friends said they would see me safe to Albany. Our route was laid down, and we set off on an afternoon to travel a short distance, where we were to sleep the first night.

On the morning after we set off, turning out of the wigwam which I had slept in, I was surprised to see the young squaw who had formerly cautioned me. She came to inform me that the two Indians had a design to way-lay me at some distance and revenge themselves upon me when my guide would not suspect danger. She had watched and secretly overheard them; and, after seeing them set off early in the night, had

followed us to acquaint me of the danger; friends promised to keep her secret, or she would be murdered, and, taking a different route, neither saw nor heard any more of them.

It may be asked, what was my aim in this wild undertaking? Simply a romantic curiosity, and to gratify a strong desire I had to examine human nature in every possible form, from the savage to the highest state of civilisation. I had heard that the complete independence and consequent rational happiness was with the savage; and that those who, from necessity or choice, had lived long enough time with them to obtain an active knowledge and strength to bear their fatigues, experienced so high a relish and enjoyment of perfect independence as never more to submit to the slavery of civilised life. It may possibly be objected, that I did not have a sufficient time to warrant my deciding against the generally conceived opinion. To say, I continued long enough to satisfy myself that this boasted independent state of nature afforded infinitely fewer rational enjoyments, with more difficulties and hardships from incessant laborious exertions, attended with frequent dangers and danger. Their enjoyments are very few at all, superior to the wild animals the world, and the troubles I conceive to be much greater. *Let those, who think otherwise, take a*

spell at living with these copper-coloured heroes, of Nature's pure unadulterated rearing and educating.

While I was with them, I was well reconciled to their modes and manners by the novelty, and by my desire to seek that knowledge which was not to be obtained so well any other way. I believe few would be better received or attended to than I was; yet, at no one moment, during my abode with them, did I wish to make the exchange of civilised for savage independance.

This was my opinion at that time, in the pride of my youth, with powers of exertion equal to most, and long before the change of American independance took place, when the Aborigines, or native Indians, lived more comfortably than they do now, as well as the Anglo-Americans; and it will be seen in its place, where I again visited the American Indians as well as the English Americans, after an absence of more than thirty years, by which I was able to draw the better comparison between the former and present situation of both, that the former have exchanged the intrepid spirit of independance which they then possessed, and which was their solitary claim to admiration, (shewn by their aspiring elevated tread, rising almost on tip-toe, with their heads as erect as possible,) for an appearance nearly the reverse.

Of the tribes that I formerly saw, many are extinct: the few that remain are comparatively abject wretches; their haughty crests are fallen, they have become dependant for the sake of spirituous liquors, which quickly enervate and destroy them, nor have they a single comfortable trait of civilisation in exchange. I am convinced that those Indians, now remaining on the Atlantic side of the Allegany Mountains, are considerably more ignorant than they were, except, indeed, they have been taught some additional vices.

Farther remarks on the general character of the Indians I shall leave to the account of my last journey to the back-country; and shall only observe, that the Anglo-Americans appear to have exchanged real sweets with nominal bitters, for real bitters with nominal sweets; which I may possibly explain more hereafter.

CHAPTER XX.

Peaceable times; disbanded sea-officers at a loss what to do; my relation volunteers with Count Orlov; accept a military appointment for India, commence soldier; the King of Denmark at the Tower; a crowded theatre.



HAVING thus far satisfied my savage cravings, I re-crossed the Atlantic and was at home time enough to rejoice with my friend on his release from so long a durance.

The general theme, at that time, was General Paoli and the brave Corsicans. I was very near embarking with my relation, Lieutenant D——k, to tender our services to that celebrated chief; and, but for my hesitating on account of former connections in Italy, as a point of honour, lest any thing should arise to disturb the peace of a family I much loved, we should certainly have gone thither.

B——, likewise, though so richly allied, was nearly as distressed and destitute of employ as ourselves. He would not comply with what his father and friends wished him to do, and they refused to supply his extravagances. A length of *discreditable* confinement, they thought, might

break his spirit to their views; but it produced the contrary effect. He considered them more as enemies than friends, declaring he did not consider it any obligation to receive part of what they could not hinder him from at their deaths, and until then he would not be confined to their domestic arrangements; but, while he had youth and health, he would enjoy that roving disposition his father had first set afloat by sending him to sea.

He regretted he had not been with me to visit the Indian tribes, and talked of going thither and remaining until quite accomplished as a *beau-savage*; then to return home and pay his relations a visit in character. I verily believe that no other earthly pursuit would have delighted him so much, when once undertaken, but his heart failed to engage in it by himself. He offered, and would have bound himself by the strongest obligations he could execute, to make over to me one moiety of the property he might hereafter inherit, if I would accompany him; but of this I had had enough, and was too independent in spirit to accept the offer, had I chosen to go.

As a trio of plotting adventurers, we frequently met to communicate and consult together. Poor Lieutenant D——le at last declared that he was so reduced, go he must or the bailiffs would get hold of him. The Russian fleet under Count

Orlow arriving in the Downs, he went down and offered his services as a volunteer; and, in all probability, I should have accompanied him, if an appointment in the military service of the East-India Company had not, at the same time, been offered to me.

There was something very fascinating and pleasing to me in an adventure to the East Indies, yet at first I could not well brook the thought of exchanging a blue for a scarlet uniform; but, when I did reconcile myself to it, I set about effecting the change in good earnest, by engaging a sergeant of the guards, on duty in the Tower, to drill me until complete enough to fall in the ranks on the parade. I attended him and a fogle-man regularly every morning, in the Tower, as soon as the gates opened. The governor's son was then abroad as page to the Duke of York; but any thing in reason that I asked of his father was granted. When the sergeant, therefore, assured me I was sufficiently perfect, I obtained permission to prove it to my own satisfaction, by equipping myself in one of the grenadier's regimentals and repeatedly exercising with the company. What made me the more zealous in this, was the being informed that orders were going out, to all the Presidencies in India, to train and discipline their troops according to the then new Prussian exercise, in lieu of the tedious heavy mode called Bland's exercise.

By these means, I satisfied myself that I could handle the musket as adroitly as most; nor was I negligent in endeavouring to obtain other useful military acquirements.

While I was thus drilling in the Tower, the King of Denmark, attended by the Marquis of Granby, came early one morning to see the Tower; when, from the very few who knew of the circumstance and the few who could gain admission, I had the honour of mixing with the small train that attended him, and accompanied him through the whole range with as much ease and familiarity as if he had been an old acquaintance. And, to say the truth, unless I had known him to be a king, I should have considered him a very poor-looking little mortal. A merry-hearted widow-lady, who accompanied me, observed that he might do very well as a king, but she should not like him for a husband.

He appeared very affable and pleasant to all around him; and, the marquis being very attentive to two fine young women, daughters of Major C——, in the Tower, who had hid themselves in the armoury, but were discovered and led forth by the marquis, whose attention from that time was wholly occupied with them, the king turned pleasantly familiar to any other person near him to ask questions. Whether it was customary with him to speak Italian, in preference to any other language, I know not; but that

morning he made all his inquiries in the Italian language, which frequently enabled me, from the knowledge I retained of it and my acquaintance with many things in the Tower, to answer him. This he noticed, by addressing himself at times to me with a gentleman-like ease, the most engaging and fascinating possible from those of exalted rank to humble individuals like myself.

As I observed before, this was a very easy introduction to see his majesty; a few days after it was just the reverse. Mr Garrick opened Drury-Lane theatre for three nights, in order to gratify the King of Denmark with a display of his unparalleled theatrical abilities.

Having myself seen Garrick in all his various characters, it was no temptation to encounter the violence of a mob; and, after the ramble through the Tower, I considered his majesty with the indifference of a common acquaintance. Yet it so happened, that, without the smallest premeditated intention, I was tempted to the struggle. Dining at a coffee-house in the Strand, on the first day of the theatre opening, I heard no other discourse or remark from those that entered, for an hour and a half that I was there, but exclamations of the immense crowd of people in Catharine-Street and all the avenues to the theatre, where numbers had been in waiting for several hours.

This induced me, from mere curiosity, to take a view when I left the coffee-house, but still without any intention of attempting to get in; and, when I had taken my view of the mob, it was evident that not one third of them could be admitted. Being well acquainted with every avenue, I worked through the alleys to a court, where there was an entrance to the pit down a flight of steps and a long dark passage. A steam poured forth from the head of this entrance, equal to that of a boiling copper; the effluvia of which, together with the screams of many that were in but could not get out again, I imagine had deterred people from crowding on the outside.

Drawing nearer the entrance, a captain of a merchant-ship and his wife seeing me, the good lady exclaimed, "oh! what you are come; well, if any one here gets in, I am sure you will!" and her husband repeated it. This induced most that were in sight to turn their heads, I suppose to see what strange being it was reputed to possess such power. Not until that moment had I a thought or wish to get in; but, as the going away might have looked something like cowardice, and it appearing a kind of adventure to achieve what the lady so firmly asserted, I determined instantly to benefit all I could from the impression made by her acclamation.

It wanted a short quarter of an hour of the doors opening. The passage had been so lately painted as to wipe off on the clothes of all who touched the walls; and, as most of the good people were dressed in their best in compliment to his Danish majesty, all down the flight and some way along the passage the men had turned their faces to the wall, pushing themselves off by their hands and knees to save their new coats.

Having nothing on that I cared for, and wearing the fashionable scratch wig of that day, I told the lady aloud, I should try at it; then, taking the wig off my head, I put it into one pocket, and my stock from my neck into another, with my shirt-collar open. Thus prepared, and regardless of the paint, I took the wall, saying to each man I came to; "come, ship-mate, as you have more room than you occupy, just ease off the weather-braces of your yard-arms a little and I'll pass." Whether it was their natural courtesy, or any opinion that they entertained in my favour from the lady's report, aided by my rough figure, I cannot exactly say; but I certainly experienced a very ready acquiescence, with as much politeness as the nature of the situation would admit.

By this mode, I advanced myself along the passage until I arrived where the pressure was too great for arms and knees to resist. This was far enough to insure my getting in, provided I

could get into the current of the stream when the doors opened. To accomplish this, I edged in a little with my shoulder between two; and, stretching my right arm out, got hold of the shoulder of a stout man: at the same time making a purchase with my left foot against the wall, I gave a loud halloo, calling out, "my arm, my arm," as if in danger of breaking it, and, at the momentary shrink by those near me, I made so good a use of my double purchase as to squeeze in sufficiently from the wall.

I was surprised how those that had been there for hours could maintain it. I was not there above three or four minutes before the doors opened, and I was soon in the pit; but with a pressure that made every bone ache, and a perspiration so strong as to make me strip off coat and waistcoat as soon as possible after getting to a seat near the centre of the upper rows, where, two or three acquaintance joining me, we procured both brandy and porter from the orange-girls in the boxes, and fixed ourselves pretty comfortably. A scene then took place, such as I never witnessed before or since, although I have often been to very crowded houses. At both the doors, after the pit was full, those next behind, rather than be defeated of the purpose they came for, and for which they had already endured so much, climbed over the heads or crawled under the legs of those nearest the doors,

bench pretty well. Among us, we managed to set up their running rigging a little, with a handkerchief round each of their heads at the best contrivance we could suggest to cover their palpitating bosoms. Nor did I quit them when the play was over, when I saw them safe home.

The pit must have had a grotesque appearance to those who came early to their boxes; the ladies being all stripped to their shirts, most of them were as wet as if they had been dipped in water. Neither was their appearance much improved when clothed, as very few had escaped without patches of paint, causing a motley mixture of countenances as well as garments. Those who had put their holiday-clothes on, looked very doleful; while others, to whom it was a matter of no great consequence, were full of laughter and fun at the appearance of their neighbours, and with a melancholy cast of countenance, were enjoying the havoc in their best clothes. This afforded more entertainment, to such careless spectators as myself, than either his Majesty of Denmark or Mr Garrick.



their respective lines of service, civil or military; and one, most deservedly, to the very high honours his sovereign has thought proper to bestow upon him.

I was more at home on board a ship than they could be. The captain and chief officers treated me accordingly with respect; and, considering myself as launching into an entire new world, assumed a steadiness of carriage and conduct had never aimed at before, but which I saw was now necessary, and soon found beneficial. I not only kept me free from any of their idyl disputes, but, by the frequency of their applications to my experience for advice, they actually yielded a deference, which, had I claimed as their senior in point of age and the service had seen, would in all probability have made the passage as uncomfortable to me as it proved the reverse. From the various anecdotes that I sometimes related, they reckoned me as old as I was, and with good-natured familiarity frequently called me so.

We had a number of raw recruits on board, to whom I told the captain, with his permission, would undertake to teach the exercise. This I was much pleased with, and I took the command accordingly. Nor was it a small matter of surprise to him and the officers of the ship, who they saw me knock the musket about so smartly *in order* to teach them their motions, and the

swore they never thought before that a sailor and soldier could be worked out of the same stuff.

I likewise taught some few of the cadets, at their own request; but they were all more disposed to learn and play at single stick and with foils; by all which my time was pleasantly filled up.

CHAPTER XXII.

At the Cape, unpleasant situation on the Table-Mount; comfortable and cheap living.



ON our passage out, stopping some time at the Cape of Good Hope, five of us undertook to climb up the Table-Mount; but so late were we in setting off, that, when a little better than half up, our guide, looking at the clouds which began to roll down from the top of the mount, declared he would not attempt going farther; assigning, as reasons, that we should be so enveloped in a thick mist as to make it dangerous and difficult either to go on or return, and that, if we ~~were~~

ceeded in getting up safe, we should not derive any benefit, as our view would be confined to a few yards around us.

A Highlander and myself were obstinate enough to go on; our three companions thought it more prudent to return with the guide, and we were left to find our own way up. As we proceeded, we found the ascent much more difficult and dangerous, nor could we discover any kind of path-way to satisfy us we were right. In less than an hour after we parted company we found ourselves in a complete pickle from the wet, and the mist so thick as to bid us defiance in any attempt to get higher up the most difficult part of the mount. We could only acknowledge our extreme folly in fancying ourselves wiser than the guide, and, after a short respite, we began to descend; but, from the foggy mist making very slippery, we found it more tedious and dangerous to get down than the climbing up had been. Our sight did not extend three yards any way; and, having passed several horrid precipices as we ascended, we stepped very cautiously, being frequently obliged to descend backwards, laying hold of scrub-bushes, &c.

Proceeding thus a considerable time, we came to a kind of wood, or wilderness, by which was certain we had lost our way; and it was equally certain we should not find it again before night, and doubtful whether we ought to a

tempt it. In setting out on this untoward expedition, every one had taken his *couteau-de-chasse*, not merely as a gentleman's appendage, but as a measure of precaution, understanding there were wild animals and wolves in particular on these mountains. Those that had pocket-pistols took them also, which was my case.

Consulting what was best, we thought the trees were friends it would be wrong to part from while so completely enwrapped in the clouds. Making choice of a spot under two trees, that were close enough together for the branches to entwine, we soon gathered brush-wood enough for a good fire, if we could but light it. With some brown paper I soon made a tinder, or touch-paper, by rubbing it with gunpowder. I would fain have preserved my pistols loaded, and strove therefore to strike a light by our knives and *couteau-de-chasse*; but, that being in vain, I drew the charge of one of them. We made plenty of touch paper; and, gathering some moss, I fired the paper by the priming; then putting it in the middle of some of the driest moss we had, I held the ball between the palms of my hands; and, blowing it well, we had the satisfaction to light a fire, which we had no difficulty to keep up afterwards, and it proved the only thing we had to comfort us until daylight.

little slumbering rest. One of the trees
tolerably well for a person to fix himself
crown, amidst the branches, without much
danger of falling; this was therefore deter-
mined upon for the bed of repose: the other
only do for a seat on any of the branches.
agreed to watch in turn for two hours to
the fire up: the watch was to walk on
the tree as a sentry, as he liked best; a
relieving watch, we went together, with
brands in our hands, to gather more fire-wood.

The night thus passed away without any
troubles. The clouds that enveloped us
blown away before day-light, when, as
the ships at anchor in Table-Bay serving to
our course, we recovered our path and made
best of our way down to our lodgings,
some hot wine with a toast and a few hours
comfortable rest enabled us to meet the heat

of wine set to every plate; and, if more was wanted after dinner, it was brought. We had likewise a desert of excellent fruit at breakfast, dinner, and supper. Of course, we laid in an excellent stock of every thing we wanted for the remainder of our passage.

a bottle of wine 1/6 lb

CHAPTER XXIII.

Arrival at Madras; with General Smith at the close of the war with Hyder Ally; Colonel C—s gallant offer to attack Hyder at the Mount; bashfulness of the governor, &c.; satirical sketch of the same.



We arrived at Madras just in time to assist at the close of the war with Hyder Ally. It would be highly presumptuous in me, therefore, to give any detail of that war, or the pusillanimous peace that Hyder frightened the governor and council into, when, by forced marches, he arrived at St Thomas's Mount, about nine miles from Madras, flying from our victorious army, commanded by General Joseph Smith, from whom he could not have escaped, had they not been panic-struck on Hyder's

sending a message, threatening, that, unless they immediately sent off Hircars with positive orders for General Smith to halt his army, wherever they might meet him, he would storm their fort and put them all to the sword.

A more absurd threat, I believe, was never made; but it produced a strong effect. In vain did the brave old Colonel C—— (then waiting to take his passage home) tell them they had nothing to apprehend; that, with so strong a fort, if they had but a few old invalids, assisted by the inhabitants, they might set Hyder at defiance with his army, harassed, dispirited, and without artillery. Moreover, he volunteered his service to attack Hyder's army that night, if they would allow him to take the force which then was in the Black Town, with the Europeans who could be spared from the garrison: pointing out to them what his experience and knowledge of the enemy warranted, that, after so forced a march for several days, they must be worn out with fatigue; and, conceiving themselves in perfect safety from any attack, would be found so remiss in vigilance, that, at the head of the troops he could muster, he had no doubt of completely surprising Hyder at midnight and discomfiting the whole of his army. Or, admitting that he should be defeated, they still had nothing more serious to apprehend, as General Smith was *advancing* rapidly after him.

it was all in vain; if they had no personal they were afraid of their garden-houses destroyed, and Hyder obtained more than old possibly have reason to expect.

When this was known in the army, considerable murmurs arose: their fatigues had been great, the fall of Hyder was considered nearly as a loss; and with him, at that time, the Mysore army would have immediately surrendered.

The young officer sketched a drawing on the spot; it was handed about in the army at the time, and then destroyed to prevent his getting into trouble. As nearly as I can recollect,

thus. The governor and council are seen on the walls of the fort, from a summons Hyder to meet him. The senior in council leading the governor along by a string through the nose and those of his brethren, the council: leader himself, having a remarkably large hooked nose, is drawn accordingly. Hyder's salutation is seising hold of this precious nose, and with his drawn scymetar he threatens to cut it off, unless Hircars are instantly despatched to stop General Smith and his army. The figures were in the fore ground; and, in the background, General Smith, with his arms folded, his men, with grounded arms, are seen looking down with contempt on Hyder and his new allies. At the time and place, the satire was

well understood, and there may be some who y
remember it.

CHAPTER XXIV.

*General Smith, his affability, &c.; Major Fitzgerald
manual wit.*



THE army was soon separated and ordered into various districts: my destiny was in the Northern Circars. Having permission, I stopped a few weeks at Madras; and, from frequent invitation to the general's house at Vippery, an estimate of his worth and his character as a private gentleman made it impossible not to love him as a man and venerate him as a commander. One instance of his affability to strangers and young officers, that they might feel equally easy at his table, may be sufficient to shew the man.

The second time I went to Vippery, a Major Fitzgerald, one of the general's staff, sat at his right hand at dinner. This gentleman was lively cheerful, and very fond of manual wit, for which he was well calculated in point of strength, being above six feet high, square, and well propor

tioned in his limbs. One species of this wit, which he usually exercised during dinner, was to have round pellets made up of new bread, by his Dubash servant, at the back of his chair; which he filipped across the table, with considerable force, to those who were within his line of fire; most of whom returned his compliment in the same way.

Some of his pellets occasionally struck me; and, as I took no notice of them, he observed, with a jesting oath, that I treated his efforts with contempt, but he would try to sting me to resentment. The general, conceiving that I might, as a stranger, feel in an awkward situation, called me familiarly by my surname, and asked why I so patiently submitted. I answered, that one very strong reason for my not doing as others did, in this instance, was, that I did not like to waste an article I had known so much the want of. "Well, well," the general replied, "that is one good rap for the major; but remember, when in Rome we must do as they do in Rome, bad as the custom is. If he, therefore, attacks you again and you do not like to waste bread, throw any thing else at him that is on the table." I assured him he should find me ready enough to obey his orders; and the major, receiving a fresh handful of pellets from his Dubash, began again, pointing most of his artillery at me.

any thing coming. Gathering it up from where it had dropped, "Now," says he, care, my boy;" and it came back with force he could send it. I was aware of inclined sufficiently to the left to let it pass when it knocked down one of the Dubavants behind. After a hearty laugh, the challenged me to a glass of wine; and, accepting it, I drank the major's health, and him he might depend in future on having in exchange for his bread. All this passed in the pleasantest manner possible, with the particularly, who warned me to be on my guard for it would not be long before he gave me for my kid. Nor was it many days before he nearly broke my neck by suddenly unhorsing me from a very spirited horse, which he used to lend me to accompany them in his

few, besides myself, who chose to encounter his rough manual wit, by a similar return.

All who knew General Smith in India will remember, that, though a strict officer on duty, he was the pleasant private gentleman when off.

CHAPTER XXV.

The army now disciplined; Major Fitzgerald's friendly present; my Gentoo servant, his sufferings.

~ ~ ~

ON the army retiring to various districts, it was ordered to learn and practise the new discipline. Printed books of directions had been sent out from England; but they could not so truly convey the smartness of the motions, so very different from old Bland's exercise, as seeing it performed.

I had repeatedly obliged the general by taking a musket and going through the whole, which he much approved of. Dining in company with him one day at the governor's, I am persuaded he purposely mentioned it to afford me the op-

portunity of exhibiting, on being requested by the governor soon after dinner. Nor was this a idle unmeaning compliment, for several sergeants and corporals were ordered to attend me every morning to learn the exercise. Some of the senior officers, likewise, requested the favour of being shewn the motions, and among these was my friend, the major; who living with the general at Vipperly, I frequently breakfasted there and exercised him immediately after, the general most commonly looking on.

On my departure for the Northern Circars, I was honoured with letters of recommendation from the general, to Colonel T——, an old officer, who had the command there. At the same time, my friendly major made me a handsome present of a noble horse, well accoutred; saying very good-naturedly, that he owed me the animal for having so unfairly dismounted me, but that he could not for the soul of him resist the opportunity I presented by my sailor-like riding the accoutrements he desired my acceptance of as a friendly proof of his esteem, notwithstanding I had so often baffled and beat him at his favourite play. I sent my horse by land to meet me at Masulipatam, for which place I embarked with others on board a country ship.

My Dabash servant was a youth of a high Gentoo cast. He had never been on salt water before; and, the weather being rough, he wa

so sea-sick, in crossing the violent surfs that roll so heavy on the Coromandel coast, that he was incapable of taking care of any thing: the provision he brought with him for the voyage, as appropriate to his cast, was therefore all stolen from him. To many, this might appear of little consequence; as there was plenty of provisions on board the vessel; but to him, poor fellow! this was of no avail, and I feel perfectly confident that he would have perished with hunger and thirst sooner than have lost his cast by partaking in the smallest degree of either the water or provisions that were on board, which his religious cast did not warrant. Of the provisions on board, there was not an ounce that he durst touch; and, had it not been for two or three Rajahpoots, who were passengers, and whose cast allowed his drinking some of the water they had brought with them, though not to eat of their provision, I verily believe he would have died before we reached Masulipatam, on the sixth day. The sickness having cleared his stomach and bowels of all nourishment, he appeared, for the last eight and forty hours he was on board, unlikely to live from hour to hour.

However I might deplore the infatuated prejudice arising from religious tenets, I pitied the youth, and took as much care of him as if he had been my brother. He was conveyed on shore by the first boat, under the care of the Rajah-

poots, and soon got round again. As were his attachment and fidelity ever after, no temptation was strong enough to induce him to leave my service for superior rank at which was too often tendered in an ungentlemanly way by officers of much higher rank than myself, who hinted to him, that, should he quit me, they would be glad to employ him.

He proved uncommonly clever, regularly managed all my other servants so well that I had not the smallest trouble with them, and continued with me for years, to the last moment of my stay in India; when, prostrating himself at my feet, while standing on the beach at the ship ready to embark, he clasped them with his arms and wetted them with tears of regret. This was a small tribute of remembrance due to my Punnapa,

CHAPTER XXVI.

Arrival at Masulipatam; Lieutenant Barnewall's liberal offer to a stranger; observations on the superior liberality of the East, and consequent want of caution on returning to Europe; Mrs W—— and her European servant.



At Masulipatam, I experienced most friendly and hospitable attentions from many; and, being invited by the chief, Mr W——, I stopped a week there, together with a Lieutenant Barnewall, who was waiting the arrival of his horses and palanquin, which he had ordered with his servants from Madras. My horse (the present of Major Fitzgerald) came in company with them.

Lieutenant Barnewall was a gentleman of as respectable and antient a family as most in Ireland, and had a distant prospect of succeeding to a title. He was remarkably hard featured, but possessed such an open cheerful countenance as would satisfy the greatest stranger of the liberality of his mind.

It had so happened, on our passage together from Madras, that we were not only strangers to each other, but equally so to all the other gentlemen on board, though there were nearly

twenty. To account for our selecting each other out, and forming an intimacy that rapidly increased into a friendship, which continued for years and ended only with his life, I cannot, otherwise than by a sympathy of souls that drew us together. There were several other pleasant gentlemen on board; yet, farther than the common civilities of the day, we seemed to separate ourselves entirely from them. Upon an after acquaintance, some of them said that our exclusive intimacy was remarked at the time, and accounted for on the supposition that we were old acquaintance. The following instance of the liberality of his mind may convey some idea of his character.

On the sixth day of our acquaintance, a few hours before we landed at Masulipatam, he led me apart and thus addressed me: "By God! my friend, you must not take amiss what I am going to offer; for, by heaven, when I landed in India five years back, I should have been glad of a similar offer, for I came out poor enough. You have been but a short time in this country, and I know, by experience, your expenses must as yet have exceeded your income. Now, if it is with you as it was with me, and you are in want of cash, I have two hundred pagodas to spare, and at your service, until quite convenient to re-pay me." I confess I had not then acquired a sufficient knowledge of the high-toned libera-

lity of the East, to save myself from surprise at so generous an offer from an entire stranger.

A more matured acquaintance with European manners in India ascertained, clearly to my satisfaction, that a generous plant of nature, removed from Europe and taking good root in our India settlements, would produce fruit in a more liberal and abundant manner than at home. There is a chilling caution in most acts of friendly aid in Europe, which is scarcely known in the British settlements in India. Not but there are characters in India who are barren enough; or, if forced into bearing, the fruit is crabbed, and the plant, as well as the fruit, despised. But, if there be the smallest particle of native liberality, it will thrive and grow to the fullest perfection when nourished and cherished all around.

And here, dropping the metaphor, I cannot refrain giving an opinion, however the fact may be lamented, that it is owing to an entire want of the caution they carried from Europe, which long habits in the East have worn from their minds, (if old enough to have possessed any when they first embarked for India,) that so many gentlemen, on their return home with handsome fortunes, have been ruined in a few years, and frequently without perceiving or knowing any thing of the mischief until it has happened, by incautiously engaging in specious speculations of banking-houses, &c.

Unpleasant as it may be for gentlemen, rising from the East with such warm glowing habits of generous unchecked liberality, to practise cold caution, they will find it a necessary prudent virtue in European climates.

I was fortunate enough not to want the assistance so generously offered, but considered the obligation equally great. Our time passed merrily at Masulipatam, being always invited to the chiefs, with whom, if not engaged particularly elsewhere, it was a luxury to sit at a table where the lady-governess did the honours of the house with so much vivacity.

A trifling incident that occurs to me now which then produced a hearty laugh, may possibly create a smile now. The lady had prevailed on her husband to send home for an English footman to wait upon her, which, uncommon as it was and not allowed of, his interest had managed, and George made his appearance when I was there. It was a custom in India, at that time, as soon as dinner was removed, for some of the palanquin bays, or carriers, to bring in a large bason and ewer with water, with which they attended behind every chair; when, a person putting his hands at the back, one of the bays poured water on them from the ewer, while the bason was held underneath by others.

George, who had noticed this mode for a year or two, willing to shew his attention by wait-

himself upon his mistress, took the ewer from the palanquin boe, and was continuing to pour the water on his mistress's hands, notwithstanding the lady had called out to him to desist, by speaking in Moors, and, as she thought, to the Moormen, saying, "Bus, bus, ge;" which signifies, "Enough, enough, you." But George did not understand the Moorish tongue; and, being doubtful whether it was plain English, he continued pouring, but watching a repetition of what his mistress said. The lady, likewise, being at that instant engaged in relating something laughable about men wearing whiskers, was not very attentive to the water pouring; but, recollecting herself, she turned her face half round, saying, rather smartly, "Bus, bus, ge, I say." On which, poor George, thinking he could not mistake her meaning, very sheepishly put his chin close to her shoulder, whispering, that "he would, with a great deal of pleasure, if his master were not present." I believe no one heard what he said besides the good lady, and she thought it too good a joke to keep to herself; therefore, as soon as she could refrain sufficiently from excess of laughter, she explained the whisper to the great entertainment of the whole company, poor George excepted, who was obliged to retreat.

As all was peace now on the Coromandel coast, we were in no haste to quit Masulipatam, where

the hospitality of the chief, vivacity of his and pleasant attentions of all the principal inhabitants, made our time pass most agreeably.

CHAPTER XXVII.

Arrive at Ellore; flattering reception; again disciplining the army.

~~~~~

LIEUTENANT Barnewall accompanied us across the Circars to Ellore, where our respective regiments were quartered. The commanding officer, Colonel T——, to whom I had letters from General Smith, &c. welcomed me as an old acquaintance; observing, that, by prior orders he had received, he understood I was ordered, although so young in rank, to teach and the army under his command a new and superior mode of exercise. He begged, therefore, that I would consider myself as one of his family, and should expect to see me at his house whenever I was not particularly engaged. His offer was not only flattering, but of considerable importance in point of expense, as it saved keeping house, except on such occasions.

chose, by particular invitations to brother-officers.

Orders were issued for new disciplining the troops, and my time was well filled up in attending many of my superior officers, who requested it as a favour, together with drilling the adjutant, sergeants, &c. who again drilled the men of their respective companies, under my inspection.

It was certainly a very honourable as well as singular circumstance to happen to a young officer, so soon after his entering the army. It was also a laborious task, but I possessed spirits and strength, at that time, equal to almost any thing, and the credit I thereby obtained throughout the army was an ample recompense.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*Appointed judge-advocate; volunteer to officiate as chaplain, by marrying, christening, burying, &c.*



AFTER several months busy employ this way, I was most unexpectedly appointed judge-advocate for the Northern Circars. I confess I felt very diffident in undertaking an office which I

had never contemplated nor thought I qualified for; and, but for the friendly advice of the colonel and several other officers of (who likewise promised their aid,) I should have declined it. Having accepted it, I seriously discharged its very important duties; and, by my attention, I trust that, for several years, we have held the appointment, I discharged those duties faithfully and honourably.

I likewise volunteered another serious duty, although fuller of mirth and glee than mine. I could not see with indifference the indecorous mode of burying our dead: there was no person appointed as chaplain or to officiate as such either as to burials, Sunday-service, or any other else that might betoken our having any religion. A military ceremony of firing over the dead was frequently all that was performed.

On a visit that was paid us by the chief, Masulipatam, in his way to Rajamundry to settle the jemibunda, or rents, which the rent rajahs were to pay the three following years. I took the opportunity of mentioning to him the disgraceful appearance it had among the natives. The answer I received was, that the Company had provided for it, by allowing five pagodas a month to any gentleman that would so officiate. In reply, I said that no gentleman would accept so paltry a pittance for what was to be considered a duty, though many might officiate with

pay when it suited their convenience; but, to perform it as a necessary duty, no officer would undertake it for less than an ensign's pay.

I persuaded the chief to represent this to the governor and council, offering to perform the whole duty of a chaplain to the garrison, without pay, until he obtained an answer. And this I did for about ten months in succession; marrying, christening, burying, and reading the service to the troops, under a large banyan-tree, every Sunday: but it was not acceded to. The marriages and christenings I regularly sent an account of to the clergyman at Madras, enjoining the parties to take the first opportunity of appearing before such clergyman, for his confirmation.

In company, the familiar call of judge or parson was much more frequent than my own name; and it was laughable enough, in convivial parties, to hear the judge or parson called upon for a merry song.

*The East-India Company's military service preferable to others; a concise account of the Sepoys officered by Europeans; condition and advice of such officers.*



I PASSED some of the pleasantest years of my life in India, without any thing very remarkable occurring to myself. In truth, I consider the East-India Company's military service as preferable to any other, for young men, especially, who have not good connections and interest to push them on to promotion in other services.

The Sepoys compose the most numerous, regular, and best-disciplined, body of black soldiers in the world. They are raised from among

disciplined chiefly after the manner of the army of England; that is, they are formed into complete, uniform, and regular, battalions, similar to our marching-regiments. They are very attentive and emulous to excel, and are therefore soon brought to the utmost exactness of discipline. In action, they are brave and steady, and have been known to stand where Europeans have given way.

But all this depends on their European officers; without them, they are of no more strength or effect than a rope of sand. They have very little confidence in each other, but experience has taught them, that, should a European officer lead them into danger, they will not be forsaken by him; and that, by his united skill and courage, he will most probably gain the victory, and at all events abide with them and share the same fate. They have black officers, likewise, each company: a subahdar and jemindar, who are commissioned; and havildars and naigs, who are non-commissioned, similar to our sergeants and corporals. These are all very useful, acting under the European officers; one of whom, a lieutenant or an ensign, commands each company. Their usefulness and services are manifest; owing to the Company the internal good order and preservation of their territorial districts, in many cases, better than Europeans.

district. The command of such detachments more or less advantageous to the European, to whom it is given, and solicited for accordingly. An officer of Sepoys is held preferable to the same rank in a European regiment, but he is obliged to follow the fates and destinations of his own men, with his respective corps; leading a life often replete with adventures of a peculiar nature. An officer of Sepoys is frequently secluded from the world of his own colour and language, sent up the country in a small command of a fort, &c.; possibly some hundreds of miles into the interior parts of India, where no Europeans are to be found. Yet such stations are generally fairly lucrative; nor is the command hard to him who is acquainted with the language of the country.



such an event will be doubted; and, if credited, considered as the most extraordinary circumstance that ever occurred in the history of governments.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

*Thoughts on the mode of settling the jemibunda which the rajahs pay to the Company, and consequences of mismanagement; the death of a rajah, by his rebelling or refusing to pay; severely wounded.*

~~~~~

It may not be considered wholly unconnected to relate here such ideas as then occurred to me, relative to the bad management in adjusting accounts with the native princes and rajahs, when settling the jemibunda, or rent, to be paid by them for the tract of land, with the villages, &c. which they hold of the Company as their lord-paramount.

Once in three years, these rajahs, or petty princes, are convened together by one of the Company's civil servants, (generally one who is in council or high in civil rank,) who is attended

They are sensible of their own consequence in the eyes of the other natives, who treat them with a correspondent respect. They are frequently detached, by one or more companies, to stations dependant on the chief garrison in the district. The command of such detachments is more or less advantageous to the European officer to whom it is given, and solicited for accordingly. An officer of Sepoys is held in less esteem than the same rank in a European regiment, but he is obliged to follow the fashions and destinations of his own men, with the exception of his respective corps; leading a life often replete with adventures of a peculiar nature. An officer of Sepoys is frequently secluded from the rest of the world of his own colour and language, and is sent up the country in a small command of a few men, to a fort, &c.; possibly some hundreds of miles from the interior parts of India, where none but natives are to be found. Yet each station is generally fairly lucrative; nor is the command so hard to him who is acquainted with the language and customs of the country.

Considering the immense extent of territory under the British dominion, with the many millions of inhabitants, (1

an event will be doubted; and, if credited, considered as the most extraordinary circumstance that ever occurred in the history of governments.

CHAPTER XXX.

On the mode of settling the jemibunda with the rajahs pay to the Company, and consequences of mismanagement; the death of a rajah, by his rebelling or refusing to pay; severed.

may not be considered wholly unconnected with here such ideas as then occurred to me, relative to the bad management in adjusting accounts with the native princes and rajahs, when settling the jemibunda, or rent, to be paid by the rajahs for the tract of land, with the villages, &c. which they hold of the Company as their lordship.

Once in three years, these rajahs, or petty princes, are convened together by one of the Company's civil servants, (generally one who is of an ancient or high in civil rank,) who is attended

by a suitable parade of military, at the place pointed, when the terms for the three following years are to be agreed on. The rajah pays only to continue in his sovereignty, yet the pany is but little benefited.

The jemibunda is not much increased, if but the *douceur* to the chief who fixes the bunda is squeezed to the utmost. The consequence is, that the rajah, finding he cannot support himself in his former splendour without squeezing his under-tenantry, takes half or two thirds, instead of being satisfied with the usual division of one third, of the crop. The husbandman, unwilling to leave his native land, submits to this extortion as long as he can; at last, necessity drives him from home and he goes beyond the Company's territory.

When at Condepillce, in Golconda,* a command, with four companies of Sepoys, witnessed a certain proof of the difference between the prosperity and population of the country that did not belong to the Company, the western side of the hills on which Condelee-Fort stood, and the once-fertile plain of Golconda, to the eastward, belonging to the Company.

It is not for me to point out the reason, though I conceive it would not be difficult

* A province, formerly very famous for its diamond-mines.

Those in the direction, or who have strong interest therein, and have experienced the sweets of settling a jemibunda, know how it is, but may not choose to acknowledge the fact. While others in the direction, who are unacquainted with such exactions, are not expected to believe it on the bare assertion of an individual; yet, if they would make proper inquiry, it might be found true.

I had not been twelve months in the Fort of Condepillee, when I was ordered to join my battalion and march against a rajah who had declined meeting the chief at Rajahmundra, where the jemibunda was to have been settled, and who afterwards refused to pay the rent affixed to the territory he held.

He depended too much on the natural strength of his situation, amid hills, bamboo woods, and jungles. He fell, and his country was taken in possession of; but not before we had lost several officers and many men. It was on this service that I was unfortunate enough to be severely wounded, insomuch as to render me incapable of farther active service. At the time, it was not expected I could possibly survive. The great loss of blood I sustained before I had surgical aid, coupled with a perfect resignation and ease of mind as to the event, saved me from fever, and, under Providence, by the help of good army-surgeons, preserved my life. But my strong

ambitious hopes were all blasted and cut off. I had often boasted I could do as much on one leg as many did on two; and, for a ten mile exertion, it was true enough, but I now found the difference between one, and two, an equally sound.

From what I experienced in the service a few years I was in India, I quitted without regret. But, finding it necessary, I endeavoured to reconcile myself to my fate as cheerfully as possible; and, there being great difficulty in procuring such accommodation as I wanted, for a passage home from Madras, I determined to cross the Bay for the west coast, where I stood there was a ship, bound for England, and likely to be crowded with passengers.

CHAPTER XXXI.

Various anecdotes, viz. fish falling in a shower of rain; deer bounding over soldiers heads in the midst of a march; a young woman carried off by the army in sight of the army.



BEFORE I leave Madras, I will relate some anecdotes that occurred during my residence there.

the service, which my Readers may believe or not, as it pleases them best, or as it may suit their digestive powers of faith.

In a heavy shower of rain, while our army was on the march, a short distance from Pondicherry, a quantity of small fish fell with the rain, to the astonishment of all. Many of them lodged in the men's hats; when General Smith, who commanded, desired them to be collected, and afterwards, when we came to our ground, they were dressed, making a small dish that was served up and eaten at the general's table. These were not *flying fish*, they were dead, and *falling* from the common well-known effect of gravity; but how they ascended, or where they existed, I do not pretend to account. I merely relate the simple fact.

At another time, part of the army marching in line, a small herd of wild deer suddenly came across; and, without halting or turning, fairly bounded over the men's heads without the smallest mischance to the men or themselves, continuing in a direct line until out of sight. These may be called *flying deer*, and approach near enough to the old lady's *flying cow*.

The conjecture was, that they had been closely pursued by a tiger, who, not making his appearance, I suppose was not quite so hungry as the tiger, who, at another time, sprung upon and seized a sergeant's girl, as she rode on a bullock,

accompanying the baggage belonging to army, and carried her away in sight of the gt attending the baggage. This was a *flying ti* and I think may fairly be allowed to be a *flying cow*.

And, as it may be prudent not to attempt flying our kite any higher for the present, I turn to a different subject and endeavour to commend a little palatable kind of physic.

CHAPTER XXXII.

Anecdotes continued; Captain Powel's recovery from a Gingee fever by drinking of claret: Pay-Master Daniels recovery from a flux drinking milk; observations thereon.



THE Gingee fever had raged violently, carried off many men and officers. Cap Powel, who lay dangerously ill with it, much esteemed in the army, and his intimate friends made anxious inquiries every time doctors visited him; by them, his case soon pronounced hopeless. A brother-officer observing the surgeon coming out from Po

tent, stepped up and inquired how he was. "Poor fellow!" said Sinclair, the surgeon, "I shall not see him alive on my return from visiting the other sick." As this passed close in front of his tent, Powel heard it; but, as he afterwards frequently mentioned in convivial company where Sinclair was present, he thought the surgeon lied a little, as he felt sound in heart, though so reduced as to be incapable of helping himself. He had repeatedly requested of the doctors, in the most earnest manner that they would permit him to drink claret, which they peremptorily refused, declaring they would as soon administer poison. As soon, therefore, as Powel found they were gone, he ordered his Dubash servant to bring him a magnum bonum of claret, (holding three pints). His servant, knowing how strongly this had been refused, expostulated a little, until his master swore, if he did not instantly obey him, he would get up and blow his brains out with a pistol. Fortunately for Powel, his Dubash did not recollect that his master was utterly incapable of rising: he brought him the object of his longing, drew the cork, and by his master's directions held the bottle to his mouth. Thrice did he suck in the delicious beverage as long as his breath would allow, by which he drank more than half the contents. Somewhat satisfied, and fatigued with the exer-

tion, he told his Dubash to place the remainder under his cot, and in a few minutes fell asleep.

Between two and three hours after, as the surgeon was returning and saw the Dubash standing outside the tent, he inquired why he was not in more close attendance on his master, if he were alive. He was told, in reply, that Captain Powel had been in a sound sleep for more than two hours, and still continued so. "A sound sleep," says Sinclair; "yes, poor fellow! I dare say it is sound enough; he must be dead; however, I will look at him." He then stepped into the tent; and, to his great surprise, found his patient in a fine breathing sweat, fast asleep. He felt his pulse, and, his astonishment increasing, he turned to the Dubash to make inquiries; when, the man pointing to the magnum bonum under the cot, Sinclair took it up, saw what was gone, and heard the whole account. Replacing the bottle under the cot, he left the tent, saying to the Dubash, "damn the fellow! let him drink as much as he likes when he awakes." Powel recovered and lived many years after.

I likewise witnessed as singular a recovery from the bloody flux. Our pay-master, Mr Daniels, at Ellore, was in the last stage of this disorder, and given up by the faculty. He had all along earnestly desired to drink milk, and as earnestly *been refused*. Having a wish to be removed to

he sea-coast, they were conveying him gently in his palanquin, though the doctors doubted his being able to live the journey out. At the first pettah, or village, he stopped at, being clear of his medical friends, he ordered his servants to procure him milk, of which he drank freely, and continued taking that and nothing else the whole journey: he speedily found relief from the disorder, and by perseverance in his milk diet soon recovered.

From various cases within my own knowledge, I am persuaded that many lives are lost from inattention to the urgent claims of those suffering under violent disorders. Medical gentlemen, I think, would do well to relax a little from fixed principles of practice, when Nature appears so powerfully to call for that kind of aid which suits her best, although it may militate against their professional judgement.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Death of an officer who was refused porter in a fever; an agreement entered into, in consequence, by several officers, to administer relief to each other if demanded; peacocks and tigers found in the same wild haunts; Condepillee, or the Hills of Tigers, abounding with monkeys, green pigeons, and paroquets; men's nests in trees, from which the natives shoot tigers.



I WITNESSED the death of one brother-officer, who, for the last day or two of a raging fever, was continually calling for porter, but it was not allowed to be given to him. He urged his request in language so strong and pathetic, to all who called to see him, as induced some of us to join in his entreaties; but we were gravely told, that, whoever did give him porter, would murder him. He was, therefore, suffered to die *secundum artem*.

It made so strong an impression on several, who were of opinion that porter might possibly, or rather probably, have saved him, that we entered into a solemn written agreement with each other, which we signed, that, if any of the sub-

scribing parties should by illness of any kind be brought to a dangerous state, and then express a strong desire for any thing which the doctors should refuse, any of the aforesaid parties, who had it in their power, would certainly administer to such claims, notwithstanding all the doctors might say.

It may be thought strange that wild peacocks and tigers should frequently be found in the same haunts. Not that there is the slightest connexion or affinity between them, but that the same desolate, wild, woody, parts among the mountains seem to suit each. In going out, therefore, to shoot the former, it is necessary to go pretty strong, both in numbers and arms, to be guarded against the latter. The wild peacock is a tolerable good substitute for a turkey; but it was more for the sport than the value that I frequently went out in such parties, consisting generally of two or three officers, attended by some Sepoys. The English name of Condepillee is the Hills of Tigers, but they abound likewise in various sorts of monkeys; also large flocks of beautiful green pigeons and paroquets. I often tried but never could get near enough to the pigeons to kill any.

Some of the natives will go, singly, into the most unfrequented wild parts of these hills and remain for two or three days, in the hope of killing a tiger for the sake of his skin. As their

method of proceeding appeared curious to me, the relation may be so to others. They fix on a tree, in a likely situation, whose branches are high and convenient enough for them to build what they call a man's nest, which is nothing more than a number of sticks and boughs interwoven among the branches, big enough to lie along upon and high enough to be out of the spring of a tiger. To this they go in the daytime, carrying boiled rice and water sufficient for the time proposed to watch for the chance of a tiger's passing near enough to fire at with a match-lock gun. The principal danger is in the passing to and from their nest, which will serve them for a long time. I have, in some situations, seen two of these nests built near enough, though on different trees, to see, converse with, and aid, each other: but they commonly remain perfectly silent the whole time of watching.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Poisonous snakes difficult to distinguish from the branches they lie upon; the large mountain-snake; a narrow escape from a Cobra Manill, whose bite is certain death..



I APPREHENDED much danger from a poisonous little snake, lying along on the branches of low trees, &c. so nearly of the same colour as to be difficult to see and distinguish if molested, and near enough to inflict a wound, which, if ever so slight, often proved fatal. They lie thus, to surprise small birds.

The large mountain-snake is said to inhabit some of the wildest parts of this extensive range of mountains. A petty rajah, who resided about nine coss, or twenty-three miles, from Condepillee-Fort, sent us an invitation to come and see a very large one that was killed the day before. But the hot land-winds at that time making the journey inconvenient and disagreeable, as we must have travelled with a suitable retinue of Sepoys and servants, it was declined. However, to satisfy our curiosity in

part, we requested the rajah to send a short junk, or piece, of the snake, by some coolies, whom we sent back with his Hircar for that purpose. When brought, it was so very offensive as to prevent our examining it closely, and we conceived must have been considerably swelled: it was much larger in circumference than either of us four European officers, two of us stout though not lusty. I have seen live snakes of this species carried about by shew men, which were full as big round as the stout calf of a man's leg.

The Covra Capell and the Covra Manill, which are reckoned the most poisonous snakes in India, every man who has been much in the interior must have seen in abundance. I had a very narrow escape from injury by one of the latter.

On the evening of my arrival at Samulcotah, in the Northern Circars, my Dubash informed me, that, on opening my camp-cot to prepare it for my sleeping on, they discovered a Covra Manill lying quietly coiled up under my pillow, from which the servants had shrunk back with fear. Taking a bamboo in my hand, accompanied by other officers, we went to the cot; and, one of them turning the pillow back with the end of his cane, the gentleman was still lying coiled up, and, on rearing his head, received such a blow from my bamboo as com-

pletely lowered his crest and incapacitated him from doing mischief. I had not used my cot for three or four preceding nights, but had contented myself, where ever we had halted, with sleeping on a camel's-hair cloth spread on the ground. We concluded, therefore, that the snake had, during the last halt, while the cot was placed with other baggage on the ground, crept into this snug birth. How we might have agreed as bed-fellows was, fortunately, not put to the test.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Extraordinary view of a thunder-storm when sitting far above it, with a description of the fort where it happened; its effect on the Author, and his observations.

~~~~~

THE singular appearance of a thunder-storm, which I witnessed at Condepillee, deserves a better description than I am capable of giving; to enable the Reader to form a clearer conception, it may be proper to give him some idea of the fort and situation.

The whole comprehends three forts, one within the other. The pettah, or village, is to the eastward on the outside the fort, at the foot of the hills, and opening on the plains of Golconda. The wall of the outer fort (as it is called) is some miles in extent, encompassing several hills: the wall itself is built not much unlike some of the stone fences to be seen in various parts of England, nor is it stronger. The middle fort is so high up the hills as to make the greater part of it inaccessible, by perpendicular rocks. The passage up from the lower fort is formed by regularly-cut stone steps, several feet wide, and winding in its ascent up the valley. I have ran up it in twenty minutes, but it required three quarters of an hour to walk it leisurely.

Little or nothing had been done, when I was there, to strengthen it, though very capable of improvement. The inner fort was an exceeding high pinnacle of a rock, completely inaccessible every way except by a narrow path up stone steps, so high from one to the other and insecure withal, as to require both hands and feet to climb up in safety. A large stone tank, or reservoir, hollowed out of the solid rock, was always full of water, and must have been supplied by the clouds, which often encompassed and crowned its head. Not being commanded by any other height, a few men could defend it against any force, so long as they had provision.

In hot weather, we frequently ascended to the middle fort, on account of the pleasant temperature of the air; the difference being such, that, while people below would be gasping for breath from the heat, we could with pleasant ease move about, or even play at trap-ball, in this higher fort.

I had one afternoon climbed up to the Devil's Arse a-Peak,\* to enjoy the extensive prospect and breathe a cooler air, when the clouds began to gather along the eastern side of the mountain, about mid-way between me and the plain, or lower fort, where we resided. It was not long before the lightning and thunder produced a tremendous, but most awefully grand, effect from the clouds below me. The lower fort, the pettah, and plains, were deluged with rain, while I sat on high, with a serene, beautiful, clear, sky over my head, calmly looking down, delighted with the playful appearance of the lightning, as it darted in beautiful zig-zags from the clouds at my feet, while the loud peals of thunder reverberated along the different valleys between the mountains.

I have seen many grand sights, but never any thing comparable to the superlatively-glorious view that was then presented. I fancied myself like Jupiter, on Mount Olympus, when hurling

\* A name given to the upper fort by the English.

supply a quantity of stone chunam, or lime, for the Company's use. He resided in a village formed chiefly of his own workmen, in a district across the Kistna, out of the Company's territories. It was a complete wilderness where he lived, and without any other European. We made a party of four, taking a guard of Sepoys with us.

About midnight, when on this visit, we were alarmed by a cry of "Burra pillee, burra pillee," "a great tiger, a great tiger," by numerous loud voices, with considerable screaming from the natives living in the pettah. Our sentinel turned out the guard; we were soon up and armed, and sallied forth with lighted torches. Pursuing a track of blood for more than a hundred yards, we found a buffalo\* that had been dragged away, after he was struck and torn from the pickets, or ropes, which he was fastened to, by a tiger, whom we did not see, the lights, together with the alarm, having made him quit his prey. The buffalo was stretched along the earth, and dying. The tiger had struck him in the throat with one of his fore paws, so deep as to injure the wind-pipe and occasion his death. Having a large hand and long fingers, I tried in vain to put the ends of my fingers into the holes which the tiger's claws had made in the buffalo's neck;

\* A tame animal, the size of an ox, kept for work.

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

*A royal tiger destroying a large buffalo; another royal tiger, his demeanour, with the effect on a horse and rider.*



MUCH has been said of the strength, size, &c. of the royal tiger, (the largest of the species,) and many doubts have arisen of what is reported concerning him.

Some years back, I felt grievously offended with a near relation, who, on my answering a question put to me by a gentleman in company, relative to the reported strength of the fore paws of a royal tiger, broke into a loud laugh, exclaiming, "*a traveller!*" The irritable effects I experienced from so unexpected an affront, on a point well known to thousands, and the consequences I made him instantly feel, have served ever since to put me on my guard in company, to prevent subjecting myself to a similar unpleasantness.

The most extraordinary instance of their strength, that came within my own view, was on a visit to a gentleman who had contracted to

back, until the point we had doubled relieved our eyes from the enchantment that had rivetted our attention. My horse was no longer ashamed of turning his back: he was high-bred Persee cast, very fleet and mettlesome, yet the perspiration dropped from him like water, attended with a nervous shaking; so little was he disposed to make use of his strength that it was some time before I could force him into a gallop. During this unpleasant delay, my eye was more over my shoulder, looking backwards than forwards; and I had made my mind up that his majesty should again make his appearance to know our business, to leave my horse to settle that point and trust to my own luck; but his majesty seemed very indifferent about either in or out of sight. My horse, at length began to find the use of his limbs, and we were not long returning home.

My gurrwalla could not conceive what the matter with the horse; and, when informed, blessed himself and Ali, his prophet, a thousand times. The horse was not well for some time after, nor did he ever like to take that road again, even in good company.

in which, I leave the Reader to form his own judgement of the royal tiger.

I likewise met with one of the family, when riding a morning's ride before breakfast, who behaved in a very gentleman-like manner, notwithstanding in the least disturbed himself, though he cast both me and my horse into a terrible aguish trembling, followed by a hot fit and profuse perspiration. I had ordered my gurravalla, or horse-keeper, to wait for my coming back at the little distance from the fort, instead of accompanying me. I rode on smartly by myself for four or five miles, when, doubling the projecting point of a hill, I spied a handsome royal tiger sitting on his breech, with his hind foot, which I fancy he was licking, up to his head; when the noise we made occasioned him to look towards us. My horse must have seen him as soon as I did, for he made a dead halt almost upon his haunches, and nearly unseated me. The royal animal, within two stones throw, neither altered his position nor changed countenance; but, gentleman-like, seemed to wait our explaining the motive of so unceremonious a visit.

Both my horse and myself seemed so fascinated by his royal presence, that we could not move our eyes from him a moment.

I tried in vain to turn my animal's head; but, using a strong cutting Moorman's bit in his mouth, with considerable exertion I forced him

back, until the point we had doubled relieved our eyes from the enchantment that had so rivetted our attention. My horse was no longer ashamed of turning his back: he was of a high-bred Persee cast, very fleet and mettlesome, yet the perspiration dropped from him like water, attended with a nervous shaking; and so little was he disposed to make use of his legs, that it was some time before I could force him into a gallop. During this unpleasant delay, my eye was more over my shoulder, looking back than forwards; and I had made my mind up, in case his majesty should again make his appearance to know our business, to leave my horse to settle that point and trust to my own limbs: but his majesty seemed very indifferent about us, either in or out of sight. My horse, at length, began to find the use of his limbs, and we were not long returning home.

My gurrawalla could not conceive what was the matter with the horse; and, when informed, blessed himself and Ali, his prophet, a thousand times. The horse was not well for some days after, nor did he ever like to take that path again, even in good company.



## CHAPTER XXXVII.

*Alarms in travelling through a wood, in a stormy night.*



ANOTHER time, I had a much longer alarm when travelling in company with a brother-lieutenant, through a wood, in the night. Being ordered to another station, we had travelled two days, making regular halts with our baggage, servants, and a small guard of Sepoys.

Resting under a pleasant tope of trees during the heat of the last day, and amused by the agility of some dancing-girls from an adjoining village, we sent our baggage and all our articles off some hours before, that our quarters might be prepared on our arrival; keeping only our horses and the servants belonging to them. Unluckily, we took too long a nap in the afternoon; so that, by the time we reached a long wood we had to pass through, of near twelve miles in extent, the sun was going down and the clouds threatened a storm. Prudent men would have returned to the village, where there was a tolerable choltry for shelter, and where we might have been supplied with a good curry and rice, &c.

quired; but soldiers do not like a retrograde motion when duty urges them forward.

We put on a dog-trot, as fast as our home-keepers could travel; but it grew dark and stormy before we reached one third of the way through the wood. The variety of discordant tones, from the numerous wild animals that inhabited so large a wood, cannot be easily conceived. The close of the day, when most of them leave their hiding-places, coupled with the approaching storm, probably increased their customary serenade. That of the jackall was the only distinguishable note, except that wild boars twice rushed across our path-way, gnashing their tusks; but they were gone in an instant and were the only animals we really saw. It was an undistinguishable chorus of hideous wild notes, most of them, probably, from insignificant animals, but not the less alarming; and we well knew there were animals, prowling about for prey, not to be trifled with; against whom, from the darkness of the night, we could not possibly be guarded by any warning of their approach. All we could do was to ride with our pistols ready cocked in our hands; to which, as a preventive, we added all the terror our united voices were capable of inspiring, from a general well-known conceit, that all wild animals are frightened at the human voice. Conceiving, therefore, that an old war-like sea-song would make as much rumbling

noise as any other we could adopt, for a length of time, we roared them out lustily, directing our attendants to join us in noise, though not in song, of which they knew not a syllable; but they made it up in quavering and screaming. And, in sober truth, if ever the "human voice divine" was likely to terrify, I think our Dutch concert had as fair a chance of performing it to advantage as any that was ever attempted.

The storm, likewise, came on most violently when we arrived within the last two miles of this tedious long avenue through the wood. The lightning, thunder, wind, and rain, were so severe, that our horses turned tail to the storm and remained immoveable for more than half an hour. In this situation, our attendants had rather the advantage, by taking shelter under our horses, where they sat like monkeys on their haunches. When the storm abated, we proceeded; all was then quiet, and we derived consolation from gaining the plain in safety. Riding briskly near three miles farther, we got to our quarters somewhat recruited in spirits, which dry clothes and a bottle or two of Madeira completely restored.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

*Hawking; tiger-shooting by Europeans; hunting the wild boar.*



THE Moormen in India are very fond of hawking, which, to a keen sportsman, I thought more dangerous than either shooting tigers or hunting the wild boar. In what manner it was formerly followed in Europe, when considered a royal sport, I do not know; but in India, where the game frequently soar and fly, a sportsman sees but little of the sport, unless, with his eyes constantly fixed on it, he follows as hard as he can ride, guiding his horse he knows not whither, at the risk of his neck.

Tiger shooting may seem hazardous; but, as far as I have seen or known concerning it, there is not much sport and little or no hazard. Along the skirts of woody hills, where tigers are supposed to haunt, there are commonly ruins of old stone buildings to be found, nearly overgrown and hid by trees and underwood. The parties, going on such exploits, provide a kid or goat, and fasten it to a bush in good view of the ruin, on the top of which they secure and hide themselves.

When evening approaches. The poor animal, thus tied, soon begins to bleat loud enough to attract the notice of any tiger that is within a reasonable distance. It requires a good look out on every side to watch a tiger's approach, as he creeps along slow and close: when discovered, the muskets are pointed and follow his motions, until the captain of the party gives the word *fire*. The most favourable moment is, when the tiger crouches to make his spring at the goat. It is usual, likewise, to have other muskets, ready loaded, carried by attending sepoys, in case the first fire should not kill the beast.

Hunting the wild boar is far preferable, requiring both courage and address. There are dogs in India well calculated for this diversion. It is requisite to be out early in the morning, that you may ride to the ground, where you expect to find one, before day-light. Before these animals retire to their haunts within the woods, they resort to some favourite watering-place to lave and drink; the huntsman's aim is to intercept them on their return to the wood.

When found, the dogs are slipped, and the animal, aware of his danger, attempts to gain the wood. Dogs, that are well trained and used to it, will frequently make their attack in the following way: the boldest will advance a little wide from each side of the boar's head, ready to seise a favourable opportunity, when the fierce

animal is thrown off his guard, by an attack, in his rear, from other dogs, who, assailing either his hind legs or flanks, may trip him on his side. Or, being wounded by a spear from a horseman during the chase, and turning on such adversary, an opportunity offers to the dogs of seizing him to the best advantage, and keeping clear of his terrible tusks, than which nothing can well be more irresistably destructive, wherever the enraged animal can make a stroke. Dogs frequently fall victims to their fierce rashness in attacking, nor are the horses or horsemen free from danger. A keen bold sportsman will ride up as near to the animal as he thinks he can make certain of throwing his spear, with strength enough to pierce his side; but both horse and rider should know what they are about and be gradually trained, by keeping a more respectful distance until both are well aware what is to be done the instant the spear is thrown.

I will endeavour to make this understood better, by describing the manœuvre. Riding up about half or three quarters speed, as it may happen, the sportsman, with his spear in one hand and the bridle tight in the other, and standing in his stirrups, should, at the moment he has thrown his spear, wheel his horse short round upon his heel, otherwise they run considerable risk from the highly-enraged animal, when wounded, turning sharp upon them.

I witnessed one accident of this kind, where a man, L——, a fine-spirited little fellow, having wounded the boar, from want of address in the management of his horse, or the horse not readily answering the bit, the boar turned quick enough to strike the horse with his tusk; and, springing up his bowels, threw both man and horse. Fortunately, L—— escaped any farther injury than the fall, as the men on foot, armed with spears, and some of the horsemen who dismounted, run up with their spears to the aid of the dogs and soon despatched the boar.

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### *Indian conjurors.*



WITHOUT any pretension to being thought a conjurer myself, I may venture to give a general opinion of the relative merits of the natives of Europe and those of Asia. In a variety of slight-of-hand practices, the Asiatics may be reckoned at least equal to their European brethren, while some of their objects of deception and dexterity appear on a far larger scale and more difficult.

to account for. As specimens, I will mention an instance or two.

At a *chaveau*, or treat, given to a large party of officers, in a tope, or grove, of mangoe-trees, a travelling conjurer and son made their grand *sulain*\* in the course of the afternoon, offering to shew their exploits. The boy, who might be eleven or twelve years old, knelt down at about three-score yards distance: any officer was desired to take a melon and place it on the boy's head. The father, driving a crotch-stake into the ground near to us, charged his match-lock gun with powder, and then requested any of the company to load it with a bullet which he produced. Kneeling down, he took his aim by resting the point of his long gun on the crotch; and, firing, shot through the melon. This he performed three times, and there was no appearance of imposition, the boy being closely watched by officers who stood a little apart on each side of him. We credited the father accordingly for his excellent shot; but he so completely deceived us in some other feats of dexterity, that, at the close of his performances, we concluded there must have been some deception in his firing at the melon, though we could not discover it. One of his tricks was as follows.

\* The name of an Asiatic mode of salutation, especially towards superiors.



He put the boy into a round basket, with a lid to cover it; but first sent the boy with another such basket empty, which he placed on the earth about the same distance he had been fired at. When the lid of the basket was tied down over the boy, the father spoke and the voice answered as from the boy in the basket, close to us. The father ordered his son to remove into the basket that had been carried and placed at the distance of sixty yards or more, empty; and, in about the time it might have taken to walk that distance, the son called to his father, the voice sounding as from the farther basket. On this, the father untied the lid, opened and turned the basket up, empty; and, ordering the boy to shew himself, he did so by rising up from the distant basket. This feat, or trick, was repeated, but we could not discover it.

At another time, I have seen a girl, about fifteen years of age, suspended in the centre of a large tent, without any apparent means of supporting her from falling. She was huddled all in a heap and swaddled thick with clothes, so as to shew only her face, which looked sickly. We were not allowed to touch either her or the bundle she was wrapped in, but we cut the air above and below her every way, with our swords, as we walked round her, without being able to account by what means the bundle, with the girl in the middle, was suspended. I resign it, there-

fore, for solution, to more able conjurors than myself.

## CHAPTER XL.

### *Dutch hospitality; Free-Masonry.*



I HAVE mentioned the generous liberality of British settlers in the East, and will now relate a curious anecdote of Dutch hospitality.

I had been some years up the country without an opportunity of seeing salt water, which I felt an inclination to bathe in. Being within half a day's ride of Jagganaporam, a Dutch settlement on the Coromandel coast, I obtained leave of absence for a week; and, sending off a few servants with what little baggage I might want, I followed on horseback, with no other attendant than my Gurrwalla, and provided with a letter to the Dutch governor, from my commanding officer, to signify who and what I was.

It was pleasant, promising, weather when I left Samulcorah; but, about the middle of my journey, such a torrent of rain fell, without wind, as made it difficult to breathe, and at



with the true coldness of a Dutchman's heart, I was suffered so to remain without the smallest aid, but a repetition of "will you another pipe rooken and a soopky drinken?" Literally, therefore, did I smoke and drink for life.

I think I was in my third pipe, taking care likewise to fill my glass whenever the bottle came to hand, when an addition was made to the company by six or seven other gentlemen of the settlement. One of them I soon found to be the doctor; and, possessing much greater vivacity than the rest, I also discovered him to be a Free-Mason, and, drinking to him, soon made myself known as a brother. He shifted his seat near to me in an instant, and was soon satisfied I was the higher Mason: pointing out to him my distress, he hurried me away to his house, where I was stripped and soon equipped with dry clothes. I would fain have gone to rest, but he advised me by all means (having sat so long in wet clothes) to go back and eat a hearty supper, giving me at the same time something to drink. I did so, accompanied him again to the governor's, was introduced to the governor's wife and daughters, (lively pleasant girls,) got into good spirits, laughed at my Dutch rigging, eat and drank myself into a perspiration; and, after a good night's rest, rose the following morning free from any of the expected ill consequences.

## CHAPTER XLI.

*A strange thief; method of shaming the most audacious.*



FROM among the variety of trials before me as judge-advocate, I select two: the one as a proof of an innate ungovernable principle for thieving, even where no benefit could arise; the other, to evince that the most audaciously hardened may be brought to a sense of shame.

A young soldier, who had often been punished for pilfering and stealing from his comrades and others, was again confined under a similar charge. Two other soldiers were under confinement for different offences at the same time: they broke out undiscovered in the night, were not to be found the next morning, and were all reported as deserters. Parties were sent after them, and European soldiers, answering their description, were traced beyond the Company's territories, but not taken.

For more than two months after, scarcely a night passed without articles being lost from the officers quarters within the fort: swords, sashes, gorgets, and clothing of all kinds; none of which could either be made use of or converted

to money in that part of the country. Vexation on the part of the loser, and laughter at the unaccountable strangeness of the circumstance, were excited every day. Even the soldiers' victuals, with some of their cooking-utensils, were stolen; and, as it was well known that none of the natives would make use of them, or even could be forced to it, it appeared the more wonderful. Some of the soldiers swore the fort was haunted, and went so far as to declare they had seen the apparition: this opinion was increasing within the garrison, and fellows, that would have followed their officers to any danger against an enemy in the day, were fearful of stirring out alone in the night.

A sergeant, going his rounds early on a dark morning, saw something flit across, but it was gone and out of sight in an instant. The guard attending him were alarmed, and he was obliged to use strong language to his corporal and a file of soldiers, whom he ordered to remain and watch while he completed his rounds and made a report to the officer of the main-guard. The officer judged it best to let things remain until morning; when, on removing a quantity of old gun-carriages, wheels, and a variety of rubbish, lying near the place where the sergeant saw the apparition vanish, a den was discovered, inhabited by the runaway thief, and every article he

had stolen for more than two months, except the provisions, was found with him.

The other case was a soldier of the name of King, one of the cleanest, smartest, and most clever, fellows in the whole regiment; he wrote an excellent hand, had been repeatedly promoted, and was as often broken for drunkenness. When drunk, he was a very madman; while he continued sober, a pattern to the regiment for correct discipline and good behaviour. He, at last, became completely hardened by repeated punishment at the halberds, and received one hundred and fifty lashes soon after a Major Donaldson had joined the regiment; who, being on the parade at the time, addressed the regiment in strong, pathetic, soldier-like, terms on the subject of punishments, until the whole parade were seriously attentive and affected. He then closed his address by admonishing the culprit, who, to prove his hardihood, had held the halberds without being tied, and received the punishment without flinching. King, who, at this time, had folded his arms across, as if listening with ease and composure to the major, his back streaming with blood from his bare shoulders, with astonishing audacity, asked the major how many stripes he thought he (King) might have received since he had the honour of serving the Company. "Too many," replied the major, "I fear, to have done you good." Continuing in

the same position, King replied, "I have had the honour to receive just nine hundred and fifty; and, if you please, major, I will take another fifty now just to make the score even, and let it stand to the next account."

Both officers and men stood aghast at his impudence. He was ordered to the hospital, with an assurance, that, should he again subject himself to the sentence of a court-martial, means would be considered to punish him more effectually. In a short time after this, he was brought to trial for drunkenness, disobedience, and striking an officer when conveying him to the guard-room. He was found guilty, and it was the opinion of most in the garrison that his punishment would be extremely severe. The sentence, however, was to receive fifty lashes only, but on his bare breech, like a boy.

This man, who had never been known to require the aid of a doctor but from the effects of punishment, was so affected at the thought of being thus disgraced, that he was taken ill and sent to the hospital, where he continued several months. And it was the general opinion that he would have continued there until he died, had it not happened that a poor unfortunate fellow, who had deserted thrice, was sentenced to be shot; and, on those occasions, it was usual to make a last request, through the medium of the judge-advocate, for the pardon of the prisoners confined or sentenced for minor offences.



This done, King left the hospital in a day or two, kept himself sober, and behaved so well, that, in a few months, he was promoted to a halberd; and, when I left India, had the credit of being one of the best sergeants in the army.

---

## CHAPTER XLII.

*Bramins\*; perform a miracle.*



I do not pretend to any learned knowledge or acquaintance with the Gentoo religion, yet I cannot refrain from making one remark: the Gentoos are accused as idolatrous heathen worshippers of images, which from outward appearances they may seem to be; but, from many inquiries among the Bramins, in whatever part of India I made any stay, it appeared that the various images they carry in procession are only considered as *emblems* of the different attributes of the Deity, and not as deities, or objects of adoration, in themselves.

\* Gentoo priests, followers of Bramah, their celebrated founder.

Of all denominations of men I have seen, I think there are none so chastely correct, in the discharge of religious and moral duties, as the Gentoos. This is pretty obvious on a general view of them: many instances came to my knowledge; and my faithful Punnapa, who served me from the first week I landed to the last minute of my stay, would have sacrificed his life sooner than have imposed on me himself, or suffered any one, European or native, to impose upon or injure his master in any respect. So far I speak to *his* moral character; and, being of a high Bramin cast, he would rather have lost his life than his cast, by acting contrary to any religious point of duty. Yet, among the lower casts of these, as well as the lower order of other, people, there are those who will attempt to impose and practise on one's credulity. I will relate an instance that occurs to my memory.

I was travelling with a party of officers and a guard of Sepoys. We stopped to refresh ourselves; and, among the inhabitants of a village, who came out to view us as objects of curiosity, one fellow was so unusually audacious as to force himself into the tent where we were dining, using strange gestures and making an extravagant noise. Having in vain endeavoured to learn his meaning, we ordered him out; he refused to go, and we then ordered the palanquin-bearers in attendance to force him out. On his being

thus removed to a short distance from our tent, we soon heard a confused noise and lamentation, and were informed that this fellow, who pretended to be a devotee, had swooned away from the effect of pollution, in being touched by our palanquin-bearers, who were Parriars.\*

We rather laughed at this account: louder lamentations were heard, and word was brought that the man was dead. We went out and found a great many people assembled round the body, lamenting and complaining loudly of the outrage. It became necessary to order our Sepoys under arms, and the servants to be on their guard. We sent for the head men of the village, and the body was thoroughly examined by the natives and pronounced to be dead. There certainly appeared no visible signs of life; but the trifling injury he could have received by the handling to overcome merely his own resistance, and the absurdity of a man's dying from the effect of fancied pollution, added to my experience of their powers of deception, perfectly satisfied my mind that this fellow was an impostor.

Desiring my brother-officers to leave the business to my management, I acquainted the natives that I had an infallible means of knowing whether the man was dead or not; that, if there was the least spark of life remaining, since the body

\* Men of the lowest cast.

had received no injury, I could restore him, though the remedy would be exceedingly severe. They wanted to remove him; but this I would not suffer, well knowing they might make any report they pleased concerning his death and create much trouble.

I laid hold of his hand, and was some time before I could feel a pulse, which completely satisfied me; but I kept my own counsel. Again the people pressed forward tumultuously, with an apparent design to carry the body away by force; but, ordering the Sepoys to advance with fixed bayonets, I made them retire to a distance, suffering only the head men to remain. In vain did I endeavour to persuade them that the man counterfeited; until, finding nothing else would do, I assured them I possessed powers they had no conception of, and, without touching the body again, I would convince them of the man being still alive, by drawing a flame from his body, which they should see, and which would continue burning and consuming him unless he arose from the earth. My brother-officers listened with nearly as much attention as the natives.

I sent my Dubash, Punnapa, to enjoin silence to the multitude, as a miracle was going to be performed by a European Bramin, which he assured them I was, (knowing I had officiated as a chaplain).

Ordering my travelling escrutoir to be brought, I placed it near the man's head, and took from it a wax taper, a small match, and a little bottle; articles I carried for the convenience of getting a light when wanted: I also took out a bit of sealing-wax, wrapped within a piece of white paper. I then directed all to be silent while the ceremony was performing, under pain of their being struck with death. Having had this explained by Punnapa to the chiefs, and by them again to the people, I was well satisfied the dead man heard and understood the whole, by slight involuntary twitchings I saw in his muscles.

When all was quiet, I began by walking slowly round the extended body four times, laying one of the four articles each time at his feet; uttering, with a solemn loud voice, the following five Latin words that happened to occur, "*Omne bene, non sine paná.*" I believe that the fall of a pin might have been heard while I was performing this mummary.

Having managed with tolerable seriousness, I took up all the articles, stood across the man, and, raising both my arms as high as I could reach, called aloud, "*Si—lence!*" Then, bending over the body, I held the match in my right hand, the wax taper in my left; and, drawing the cork from the bottle of phosphorus, just above his navel, at the moment I applied the match to light it, as it were, from his body, X

began to sing, " God save great George, our king." But, the instant the flame was seen, there was such a yell of " Ah, paw, swaamee, ah, yaw, swaamee," as completely drowned all my fine singing. Lighting my taper, I proceeded with my work, by melting the sealing-wax and dropping it hot, close above his navel; but the fellow had not patience to stay for more than two or three good drops of my miraculous wax, before he jumped up and ran away, bellowing and clawing his belly, without stopping to thank me for his cure or answering the calls of others, until he got within the village.

That the fellow had heard and understood what passed, with my declaration that I possessed a power to draw forth a flame from his body, was evident; and I depended on the sudden attack of the burning wax, on so tender a part, heightened by his own imagination, to overthrow all the obstinacy of trick and produce some such effect as would satisfy he was not dead. What his particular aim was, it might be difficult to make out.

## CHAPTER XLIII.

*Decline settling at Madras as a lawyer; embark on board a country ship for the Island of Sumatra; water-spouts.*

~~~~~

HAVING related such anecdotes as occurred in India, some of which may amuse and some may possibly instruct, I return to the narrative more immediately concerning my own history.

I have already mentioned that it was my intention to cross over from Madras to the west coast of Sumatra, for the better convenience of a passage to England. So far as making a fortune may be reckoned productive of greater happiness, I am persuaded I might have done infinitely better if I had suffered myself to be persuaded by a gentleman who had quitted the army a few years before, on account of a constitution too feeble to contend with an active military life; and, since that time, had practised as a lawyer in the courts at Madras: in which profession, though no more brought up or qualified for it than myself, he was making money rapidly. He very earnestly solicited me to join him in partnership; but, my disposition not leading me that way, I declined the liberal offer.

A country ship, belonging to Bombay, was then lying in the roads, bound to Acheen, the northernmost end of the Island of Sumatra; and in this ship I took my passage for Bencoolen. Captain P——, who commanded her, assured me, that, though he purposed trading all along the coast, as circumstances might encourage, in the Malay as well as the English and Dutch ports, yet he had no doubt of arriving at Bencoolen some months before the East-India ship I meant to take my passage home in would be loaded and ready to sail for England; adding, that he should not only be glad of my company, but he could explain, upon the passage, how materially it might serve him and at the same time be exceedingly pleasant to myself. The last person I parted from, on embarking, was my faithful Punnapa: the poor fellow threw himself at my feet and bathed them with tears of sincere attachment.

In crossing the Bay of Bengal, I saw more water-spouts than I had seen in all my preceding voyages. One morning, about sun-rise, the mate called me to view five in sight at the same time, in different points of bearing and various distances from us. It was a perfect calm and a beautiful morning.

While we were making remarks upon them, and comparing their different appearances, our *attention* was suddenly called by a loud hissing

noise; and, turning about, we observed the sea on our larboard-bow in a strange commotion, bubbling and rising up in hundreds of little sharp pyramidical forms, to various heights, alternately falling and rising within an apparent circle, whose diameter might be about sixty feet.

It was soon evident that another water-spout was beginning to form, in a critical situation for us, not being half the ship's length off. All was alarm and confusion: Captain P—— was soon upon deck, but neither he nor any other on board knew from experience what was best to be done. It was nearly impossible to withdraw the eye from this object: the sea, within the circle of its influence, boiled up with increasing rage and height, whirling round with great velocity and an indescribable hissing kind of noise. At times, the water was thus raised nearly as high as the fore-yard; then sinking, as from some impediment or obstruction, and again commencing as before.

We had all heard of firing guns at water-spouts, and directions were given accordingly; yet, though we had several loaded, not one was found in condition; they only burned priming. Orders were then given to load a fresh gun; but, excepting the mate, it was difficult to get any one to move, so rivetted and fixed with gaping astonishment were all the Lascars and people on board. *While the mate was busy after the car-*

riage-gun, Captain P—— and I concluded it would be right to try the effect of making a slight concussion in the air, by getting all the people to exert their lungs by loud cheers. God only knows whether this did really produce any good effect, but we fancied so. I had a lighted match in readiness; and, when the mate had loaded and primed the gun, I fired it, and two or three salutes caused the whole to subside. The ship was not in the least affected the whole time, except by the undulating swell when the water fell down again; yet, from the whirlwind kind of hissing, we were in momentary expectation of seeing the yards and masts torn to atoms and whirled into the air, and doubtful whether the whole of the ship might not soon be engulfed in the vortex.

It has ever remained a doubt with me, whether the proximity of the ship, at the commencement of the water-spout's formation, did not alone check and prevent its rising and composing one of those tremendous columns of water, reaching from the sea to the clouds. I do not pretend to account for the causes which produce these sea-phenomena. I am content to relate simple matter of fact, leaving the explanation to the more studious and enlightened.

CHAPTER XLIV.

Arrive at Acheen; introduced to the sultan; large cannon half sunk in the earth, evidence of greater strength formerly; an enormous gun over the gate-way of the palace.



AT Acheen, and all the Malay ports along the coast of Sumatra, I found an order of men distinct from any I had ever met with before. Compared with the inhabitants of India proper, across the Bay, they appeared completely savage, ferocious, and exceedingly sanguinary in all their punishments. I had an opportunity of examining them attentively, from a novel kind of introduction by Captain P——, which, as he had hinted at Madras, would serve his interests and occasion me a pleasant reception from the Malay chiefs. To this end, he had Sepoy uniforms made for some of the Lascars belonging to the ship, who were to appear as my body-guard as often as required.

On Captain P——'s going on shore at Acheen, he waited upon the sultan's agent for regulations of the port; acquainting him, a British officer was on board the ship, who, from a strong desire to pay his respects to the Great Sultan of

Acheen, before he returned to England, had crossed the bay for such purpose, but would not land until assured of a reception suitable to the dignity of the great monarch he served. This compliment was well suited to the meridian of Acheen.

By the sultan's orders, a boat, or rather a barge, was sent off to the ship; in which boat were the agent and several officers of his court, who invited me, in the sultan's name, to grace his palace. The ship's guns saluted them as they came on board; saluted me on leaving the ship, attended by my guard; and, on approaching the shore, we were so closely saluted by guns of an enormous calibre, that we would gladly have excused the compliment of being fired at so near our heads. On landing, I was met by an Indian Portuguese, a resident merchant, who spoke English fluently: he was to act as interpreter. Other officers of the court were with him, to receive and attend me to the palace; on entering which, the guns of the palace fired another salute, which was repeated by the guns on a battery and by the ship.

The ceremonies of introduction to princes of the East were grown familiar to me, and I plainly observed that my regimental uniform was a novel attraction to the sultan and all his court. I was most graciously received, and acknowledge *I rather exceeded the truth when repeating what*

ain P—— had advanced, respecting my desec so great a sultan before I left India; I believe the little that I did say was considerably enlarged upon by the Portuguese merchant, who, I understood afterwards, was as interested in my favourable reception as ain P——; for, without permission from sultan, no ship was allowed to trade, and was entirely refused until considerable presents made: all which was smoothed down, and permission obtained, through my means.

Within a week, Captain P—— was enabled to dispose of such part of his cargo as suited the market, (opium and blue long-cloths in exchange for gold-dust, &c.) to great advantage himself and the Portuguese merchant, who was his factor. During this, my time was occupied in rambling about, having three attendants to escort and shew me where I went; and partly by attending to the sultan, who called me every day to a short conference, and shew chenam and beetle-nut with him. Our conversations were not very edifying, conducted through the medium of an interpreter, and consisting of short questions and answers, more of civility than any thing else. However, my time altogether passed pleasantly, having a table supplied by direction of the Portuguese, with slaves to attend.

From the number of large cannon I observed in my rambles and rides, (most of them half sunk in the earth from lying there so long,) it was evident that Acheen had been a place of greater note formerly, and much better fortified; yet the ignorance of the inhabitants respecting these guns was astonishing. That they were of European manufacture I had no doubt, though the Malays would not allow this, notwithstanding they could give no account how or when they were brought. But, as a proof of their capability of performing greater things, they pointed to an enormous large cannon, placed on high over the great gate-way at the entrance to the palace; a cannon, which I believe no European would claim the manufacturing of. It was big enough for a stout man to go into with ease; very coarse and clumsy, both inside and out; and there were a few stone balls lying near, very suitable in appearance to the piece of ordnance they were made for. This, as I understood, was only to be discharged when an enemy approached in front of the gate: it had never yet been fired; and, to say the truth, I would rather have been the object fired at than the firer of it.

CHAPTER XLV.

Malay punishments; precautions necessary to guard against surprise from Malay pirates; running a muck; jealousy and savage revenge; singular ordeal of Malays accused of adultery.

~~~~~

Is my first walks about Acheen, particularly in the buzar, or market-place, I was surprised to see so many cripples, some without hands and feet; many with the loss of either one hand or one foot; and others with the loss of two. On inquiry, I found they were all culprits, punished, according to the enormity of the offence which they had committed, by the cutting, or rather chopping, off a hand or foot. Some of them, by a repetition of offences, had been so often punished as to have neither hand nor foot left, and thus far were rendered nearly incapable of committing farther offences. But the most extraordinary circumstance, as it appeared to me, was the account I received of their mode of treating the stump of the leg, after the foot was literally chopped off by an instrument, at one stroke, a little above the ankle. A bamboo cane was prepared, ready suited to the size and length of the culprit's leg; the hollow of which

cane was nearly filled with heated dammer.\* The instant the punishment was inflicted, by lopping off the limb, the bleeding stump was thrust into this heated resin within the bamboo, which, as it cooled, became fixed; and thus, if the victim to the law lived, he was provided with an excellent bamboo jury-leg, to stump about on. Many, I have no doubt, died; but of that the Malays were very indifferent.

After leaving Acheen, we touched at other Malay ports along the coast. Those, that were in subjection to the Sultan of Achcen, received and traded with Captain P—— very readily. I was considered as the great man, and accordingly treated with great respect.

At other Malay ports, independant of Acheen, and some of them said to be at war with the sultan, Captain P—— was not only refused permission to traffic, but we were obliged to keep a strong guard on deck, day and night, to prevent being taken by surprise. We, therefore, never allowed more than one Malay boat, at a time, to be along side the ship; and, even for the few that came on board, six or eight at a time, it was deemed necessary to shew them we were well armed. Every free Malay man wears his creese constantly in the sash, or girdle, round his waist;

\* A resinous kind of substance, something like pitch, but apparently of a harder nature and not so ready to melt.



and many ships have been cut off and every soul murdered by these blood-thirsty savages, after coming on board as friends to trade, &c. when they have found the people of the ship negligent and off their guard.

There is no doubt of the Malays practising that most singular and barbarous custom of running a muck; but, as I saw no instance of it myself, and there are accounts given by others who have, I shall briefly explain it, for the information of those who may not understand the term.

A Malay man, who abandons himself to despair from any cause, though it most commonly proceeds from the ruin attending his extreme propensity to gambling, takes opium until producing phrenzy; and then, with disbevelled hair, he draws his creese, and, running along, stabs and destroys all he meets, until he is destroyed himself.

The Malays are savagely jealous, and revenge themselves by assassinating the party they suspect, even without proof; but, on actual detection, the injured Maay kills both the man and woman if he can. The woman is sure to fail a sacrifice; and, should the man escape at the time, being accused thereof and suspected to be guilty, he has to go through an ordeal from which few can escape with life.

He is taken to a large open spot, where a Malay in the neighbourhood, who wears a turban, attends. A ring is formed, according to the number assembled, and the delinquent is placed in the centre. If he can make his way through these surrounding opponents, all armed with creeses, and then, by flight, can reach a tree as his sanctuary, he is deemed innocent and escapes. If he makes no attempt to escape, a circle is drawn in closer and nearer, until the mob more stab him with their creeses. His only chance, therefore, is to start off at first, before the ranks thicken by the drawing in of the circle. I saw nothing of this ceremony, but I have shewn a tree said to be one of these sanctuaries. I understood, likewise, that there was a frequent cause for jealousy, notwithstanding the threatened penalties.

## CHAPTER XLVI.

*Ayerbungy, Padang, Tappanooly; mountaineer-aborigines, their reputed cannibalism accounted for; decline their invitation to accompany them to their mountains; their report of an Englishman then residing with them.*



SUMATRA has a length of coast of more than one thousand miles; there are, consequently, a variety of ports, many of which belong to the native Malays, some to the Dutch, and some to the English.

We touched at Ayerbungy and Padang, two Dutch settlements, where we were treated with civility, and I believe Captain P—— did some business; but, as my assistance was not required, and the Dutch love to transact matters in a close snug way, I made no inquiry and heard nothing about it.

We stopped some time at Tappanooly, where I had the pleasure of meeting Governor H—— and part of his suite: he was then on his way to Madras, previously to undertaking the establishment of a settlement at B——n. At Tappanooly, which is one of the out-settlements belonging to Bencoolen, I reckoned myself rather

natives on the coast; and, from what I learn, were driven from the sea-coast, some centuries back, by the Malays; when, retiring to some extraordinary fastnesses in the mountain they have maintained a complete independence ever since. Nor could I hear of more than two Europeans that had ever ventured or been admitted among them: the one, a Mr M—botanist, who concerned himself about no other business; and the other proved afterwards to be an old acquaintance, whom I have already mentioned and shall soon have occasion to introduce anew.

I attached myself almost as strongly to the Malays, and from similar inquisitive motives, had formerly to the American savages; and appeared to be as much pleased with my situation. They usually dined with us at the resi-

the question, whether or no there was any truth in the reports concerning their eating human flesh. Governor H——, the resident, and other Europeans present, sat all aghast at what they deemed my temerity, and acknowledged afterwards they were fearful of some serious consequence. But, instead of being offended, the head man of the three, with a smiling countenance, as if complimented by the question, readily answered, that, when they slew an enemy in battle, it was customary to cut him up, and for the warriors, especially the young men, to take a piece of the flesh and champ it with their teeth, smearing their face and arms with the blood, in token of triumph as well as to increase their courage; and that some would swallow it, but it was never eaten as food.

I acknowledge and lament, that this is a savage detestable custom, but it does not amount to my idea of cannibalism, or man-eating. In truth, I do not believe there are any such people existing, as to delight in eating human flesh as provision. Necessity has often driven Christians to eat the flesh of their fellows, and so it may occur to savages: their passion for revenge, likewise, as well as the ferocious custom just related of increasing courage by such daring, may have induced the world to believe such savages to be cannibals in the strict sense of the word; but, with all the inquiry I have been able to make, I

could never find sufficient authority to induce me to credit it.

My friendly mountaineers invited me to go up with them to their country, assuring me of perfect safety; and that, if I did not like to stay with them, I might return in about four months, when they purposed being again at Tappanooly; but that they thought I should find the mountains where they lived, above the clouds, so much preferable to the lower earth, that I might incline to live entirely there. In proof of which, they said that one Englishman had been with them several months, and was so satisfied that he had no wish to accompany them down when they came away, but desired them to bring him an Englishman for a companion.

This was rather a drawback on my vanity, having given myself exclusive credit for their seeming partiality, which I now found was to be divided with another. Had I been as capable of exertion as when I accepted a similar kind of invitation in America, I should most readily have acceded, and been well pleased with the probability of meeting a countryman. I regretted it was not in my power, and declined the offer. I think it was the resident who inquired if they had learned the name of this Englishman: it sounded much like my old friend B - -, who is spoken of in my last voyage, &c.; but, from *their* pronunciation, it was difficult to ascertain.

On my pronouncing it, they all nodded their heads, declaring it to be the name: it was not a common name, yet there might be others. I could no way account for his being there, yet his eccentricities made it not very unlikely.

As they intended returning soon, I wrote a short note, mentioning the case of my visiting India; and, should the person prove to be my old friend, how much it would rejoice me to meet him at Fort Marlborough, where I was proceeding in order to take my passage to England, in a ship which I then understood was not likely to sail for months.

## CHAPTER XLVII.

*Moco-Moco; visit the old sultan; arrive at Beccoolen; hospitality of the settlement; scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation is so strong; fire produced by bamboo-friction; grass too strong for horses to penetrate, its fierce burning.*



**FROM Tappanooly, we sailed for Moco-Moco; a place which, for excessive heat, sailors declare to be within a sheet or two of paper from hell.**

I did not experience any such extraordinary weather the few days we stopped. We had a short visit of ceremony to the old sultan, and on our return asked us to chew beetle-nut with him.

On our arrival at Bencoolen, I waited on the governor, commanding-officer, &c.; and was hospitably received and entertained, all the while I remained there, by the gentlemen of the settlement. Unfortunately, the ship that was bound to England was not expected to sail for several months; but my time passed merrily and pleasantly, from continual invitations and excursions into the country. One of the things that surprised me, was the scarcity of culinary vegetables where vegetation was the most rapid I ever noticed; of which I will relate an instance.

A gentleman of the settlement, intending to build himself a country-house, requested me to accompany him to choose a spot. Having gone a few miles south from the fort, we wished to reach an elevated spot on our right, which we conceived would afford us a prospect of the country. There was nothing but grass to obstruct our going up a gentle acclivity, to the top of the hill, but we made the attempt in vain. Our horses could not possibly proceed farther than a few rods through the grass, owing to a strong tanglement below of the dry withered grass through which, a very coarse strong grass



up five or six feet high. Giving it up for that day, we returned the next with two stout negro-men; ordering them to penetrate and get as far as possible up the hill, and then set fire to the grass. This they did, and their means of procuring fire may appear curious. Splitting a piece of dry bamboo-cane, they scrape the edges to make a kind of tinder with the fine scrapings: they put this into the hollow between the slit pieces, which are held or tied together. A notch is then cut nearly through one of these pieces, over the place where the tinder-scrapings are put: the edge of another piece of slit bamboo is applied to the notch, when, by the friction of sawing backwards and forwards, fire is produced to light the tinder.

I confess I had no conception, before this, that grass would burn with such rapid fierceness as was here proved. It spread in a complete circle, and the loud snapping and crackling of the flames was similar to that which I had known from a fire at Cornhill, in London, when the four corners were all on fire at the same time. The two negroes had managed to get within the circle; and, from their running about to aid the flames where necessary, and tossing the fire along, appeared like devils living within the flames. We left them to attend the fire and spread it so as to procure a path for us, the following day, to the top of the mount.

The extent of burnt grassy ground we could ride and look over, the ensuing day, was immense; the fire had burnt in every direction as far as the grass extended, until stopped by deep ravin-swamps with which the country abounds. The wild inhabitants, the buffalo, tiger, &c. in the neighbourhood of the fire, have been considerably disturbed by the unconflagration. We were disappointed in the expected object, the prospect from the summit of the hill. But I was much gratified by the view of the rapidity with which the fire caught the strong green grass, which must be ascribed to the thick matted bottom of dry grass that had been gathering for ages.

Riding out that way within ten days afterwards was still more surprised at the rapid vegetation which had succeeded the fire: the new grass had grown up as high as the calf of my leg, and thick enough to mow. Yet, notwithstanding this rapid power of vegetation, vegetables were so scarce that gentlemen's tables were scarcely supplied, and the ships crews so destitute that the scurvy raged dreadfully among the seamen.

## CHAPTER XVIII

*Earthquake:—The first of 1811, &c. &c.*  
*It happened on the 11th of January, 1811, at 10 o'clock, &c.*  
*It was a great shock, &c. &c.*



THE Island of Sumatra is much subject to earthquakes, productive, at times, of great and sudden consequent changes, some of which, that had occurred within memory, were pointed out to my observation; rivers changed in their course, &c. with others that exhibited evident marks of more ancient convulsions. In general, however, the shocks were harmless, and their frequent recurrence made them little thought of. An instance of this occurred soon after my landing at Bencoolen.

Some gentlemen were playing at trap ball in the fort; I was sitting near as a spectator. An officer, who was preparing to strike, called out suddenly for us to attend, as we should soon have an earthquake. The attention of every one was instantly excited; and I was the only person doubtful of his being in earnest or not. Before I could inquire, the earth trembled under us.

and I very distinctly felt a tremulous motion in my body. It passed away in a few seconds. The officer, who had warned us of its approach, again called to those he was playing with to look out, and with the most composed indifference went on with his game. Inquiring of the gentleman, afterwards, how he came by his knowledge of what was to happen, he said that, looking out to what quarter he had been directed to the ball, he observed some fowls, below the fort, running wildly about and screaming in a circumstance which most in the settlement took to be a pretty sure indication of an approaching earthquake. It may be readily supposed that fowls and various animals, moving so close to the earth, and susceptible of very acute nervous sensations, might quickly be sensible of the vibrations, but the impression of fear cannot be accounted for.

My stay at Bencoolen was prolonged to ten months; in which time, the number of deaths became alarming, even to those who had been long accustomed to see the ravaging effects of so unhealthy a climate. I had been more than six months without the slightest illness, and lived freely, being in much company, and continued a custom I was much blamed for by the medical and other gentlemen of the settlement. This was, as soon as I rose from my cot in the morning, to go out into the air and have

two or three days, they were incapable of doing the smallest duty; without pain, (except what proceeded from feebleness,) without fever, without appetite, and without power to move, more than just to creep from their hammocks to the doctor's birth, requesting that aid which he had not to give.

In this dismal gloomy situation, scarcely a day past, for the last three weeks we were at sea, but we had to bury one or more of them; some mornings, three at a time. For more than a week before the ship got to the Cape, the whole of the ship's crew, before the mast, were not able to eat one large saucepan of fresh pork and fowls, cooked for them as savourily as possible.

In this situation as to strength, with a leaky ship, becalmed in sight of the Cape, and within soundings, I was trying one forenoon, with hooks and lines, to catch fish. A Dutch India ship was in sight, about seven miles to the southward of us, while the captain and officers of our ship were taking their observations, looking round the horizon at the perfect glassy smoothness of the sea, I observed the Dutch ship in a strange position, apparently down on her beam-ends; which I noticed to Captain R——.

It continued a dead calm with us, nor was there the smallest appearance of any approach of wind. Captain R——, looking at the Dutch ship with his glass, swore he could not make out

what was the matter with her, whether carried her masts away or was overset looking at me in a cross though arch manner said, "I believe you have been calling to your aid, to conjure up one of the squalls you were amusing us with an act the other day."

At this time, and for some hours before, the ship's courses were hauled up, the top-sails lowered on the caps, the top-sails to the masts, (the ship having neither motion,) and the stay-sails down. I was looking earnestly at the Dutch ship discovering any cause for her continued commotion. Captain R—— ordered so up to furl the topgallant-sails, and then the top-sails to be lowered and a reef. The men were going aloft, and some actually on the yards, when so sudden a squall came on as to lay the ship near broadside. The first effect was violent pitching every second of time, and in less than ten minutes it blew a perfect hurricane. The men on the yards fortunately got off as all hands were ordered down for their safety. In less than ten minutes, every loose sail in the ship except the fore-sail, was blown clear of the yards. Had the top-sails remained on the masts must have been carried away or have overset; the latter most likely, a

very crank, owing to the great quantity of cargo which Captain R—— had taken on board for his private venture, to sell at the Cape of Good Hope, St Helena, and which, being stowed between decks, made her very top-heavy. Had it not been for the imminent danger we were thus thrown into, the rending, tearing, snapping, and blowing away, of the sails, in a variety of shapes and sizes, in so short a time, would have been entertaining enough to a well-informed spectator.

Though at a considerable distance from the land, we were on a lee shore, and it was very fortunate that the fore-sail, (though split in getting the tack down,) being a strong new sail, enabled us to haul the wind sufficiently to clear the land. Other requisite sails were soon bent, and the squall terminated in a strong gale, which lasted some days; but our main bustle was over in two hours.

When the ship was a little in trim again, we sat down to dinner. Our captain looked very sulky: I guessed the reason, for it had happened, three or four days before this occurred, that the captain had been disputing with me on the subject of white squalls. He maintained, that any seriously-heavy squall of wind might be foreseen and guarded against, if those, who were on deck, kept a good look out. I related one that I had witnessed in a passage from Jamaica, by which we lost two top-masts and several hands the

me rally so much, (being an old expert) that he had been rallying me about it the sequent day until this happened.

Waiting my opportunity, therefore, when he was cleared away, I asked him "thought of a white squall?" This was one he could parry with good humour: so I took the subject had it been with him for the past, that he could not bear railery upon after a fruitless attempt, he turned it declaring he believed I dealt with the devil the wandering Jew, as I appeared to be acquainted with all parts of the globe myself, who, by the difference of our local seaman before I was born. This set a roar of laughter, affording him an opportunity of working to windward of his chagrin. Covering from my laughter, I said, "I



As I observed before, our ship's crew lessened daily by the sea-scurvy, so that, by their gradual decrease and the ship being leaky, passengers and all were obliged to lend their aid. Neither the captain nor any of the senior officers had ever been at the Cape; I, therefore, undertook to pilot the ship in: but we had not sufficient strength left to bring the ship to an anchor and moor her in safety, without aid from the shore, the last gale having proved fatal in destroying the feeble remains of life in many of the crew. Nay, so much was the aid of every person on board required to work the ship in and bend the cables, that the bodies of two men, who died in the preceding night, were left uninterred upon the poop, when the ship came to an anchor; and another poor fellow, who lay ill in his hammock, spoke to the gunner, (as he passed along to fire a signal-gun for assistance,) rejoicing he was likely to get on shore soon. On the gunner's return, a few minutes after, he found him dead: the shock of the gun, fired so near him, was supposed to have driven away the feeble remnant of breath.

Between forty and fifty of the ship's crew were conveyed to the shore as soon as possible the same day, many of them incapable of walking. One only died after landing; he was a strong, Herculean-built, negro. The rapid convalescence of all the rest appeared like magic: within

directed to drink new wine moderately, and with a superabundant supply of excellent tables, wrought wonders with them all. The heartiest soon got at more than the allowance; and that, which might have been highly injurious at other times, proved singularly beneficial in recovering them from a dreadful scourge as the sea-scurvy.

From the sufferings of the ship's company, their reduced numbers, as well as their debility, we remained some weeks at the place for the purpose of recruiting; which was spent idly by the other two passengers and myself.

## CHAPTER LI.

*written to live at the Cape; observations and suggestions relative to its improvement as an English colony.*



WE made frequent and long excursions into the country, travelling in a kind of waggon-coach; sometimes accompanied by our captain and pretty frequently by the colonel-commandant, a German officer, who had seen much service under Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick. He used much persuasion towards Captain M—— (a brother-officer, who had lost a leg, and, like myself, was going home to be invalided) and myself, to induce us to stay at the Cape, where it was much in his power to give such assistance as would make us all but independant. He was miserable, he said, for want of society; the Dutch officers, who were under his command, having either education nor mind. Invalids as we were, we pitied his situation, being truly isolated from congenial society. He was a sensible pleasant gentleman, and much of the officer; but we declined his kind offers.

From the observations I had an opportunity of making, and information I received while at the

Cape from intelligent inhabitants, and among others from an English gardener, who had been sent out and resided at the Cape for more than three years, by directions of his Majesty, to search for and collect new plants and seeds; from these sources, and the experience that other countries had given me, I considered myself warranted to suggest to government, at the time the Cape was in our possession, reasons for keeping that possession which conquest had given; and, as those suggestions are tolerably concise, and comprehend the descriptive opinion I should have given of the Cape of Good Hope when last there, it may not be thought much out of place to introduce them here.

The Cape of Good Hope, the southernmost promontory of Africa, lies nearly in 35 degrees of south latitude, extending between 400 and 500 miles east and west, and between 200 and 300 miles north and south. There were reckoned to be nearly 20,000 Europeans, or descendants from Europeans, while under the Dutch government, who possessed between 30,000 and 40,000 slaves, Africans and Asiatics. The number of native Hottentots is not easily ascertained: they appear a mild, docile, inoffensive, people, easily induced to be useful in the management of cattle. They have been much misrepresented in Europe, and the accounts given of their customs and manners strangely exaggerated. Their per-

sons, instead of being disgustfully homely, as represented, are on the contrary well shaped, and, for black people, more comely in countenance than the negro race. I speak of the Hottentots only, and not of the other black nations farther inland.

The Dutch government, instead of encouraging commercial improvements, have endeavoured to discountenance them as much as possible; and, from a narrow policy, have even prevented their own settlers from transporting articles coastwise, fearful that a true knowledge might be gained of the country and the bays, harbours, &c. along the coast. From what little we do know, however, of the excellent wines that are produced; their grain, vegetables, and fruits, of all kinds, inferior to none; with the profusion of many rich articles of commerce that it is capable of furnishing, such as aloes, succotra, myrtle, wax, salt, paints, indigo, cotton, tobacco, ivory, ostrich-feathers, seal-skins, and whale-oil; besides many other articles, that would afford a most extensive trade of raw materials with the guardian state, which would again reap the benefit of exporting them to all parts of the world, when manufactured; — there is good reason to believe, should the Cape be permanently settled as an English colony, and proper encouragement be given to it, that both the Cape and the territory belonging to it would soon prove most va-

uable acquisitions to this country. It may be termed the strong centre-link of a great commercial chain, proceeding first from England to the Cape, and uniting there with two others; the one extending to the East Indies, China, &c. and the other to South America, the Pacific Ocean, &c.

To give a speedy increase of strength and value to the Cape, as an English settlement, encouragement should be given to British subjects to go thither and settle, so as to out-number the Dutch inhabitants and thereby give a *British ton* to the customs and manners of the country. To do this effectually and beneficially, I consider the whole territory of the Cape as belonging to Great Britain by right of conquest. The government of Great Britain has therefore a right (within the bounds of justice and equity to prior settlers) to dispose of this territory in such manner as will best answer the most beneficial purposes to the mother-country, generally; and to the inhabitants, in particular, who are already settled there, (as well natives as others,) or who have settled there since the conquest, or who may hereafter settle there.

The government being most equitably entitled to a remuneration for past expenses on account of the nation, as well as for the present and future expense of protection, I conceive that some *certain ground-rent, or land-tax, might be laid*

upon the whole of the land at present occupied and improved in any way, either by buildings, farming, or any other manner; the said ground-charge to be paid annually by the owner of such landed property. *All other lands*, within the territory of the Cape, having no legal owner accountable and capable of paying such a ground-charge, to be at the disposal of government, in the following manner.

*Every married man*, already settled at the Cape, or who, being a natural-born subject of the British government, should go thither to settle, on making the necessary application and setting forth his claim, to be allowed ..... acres of such government-land for himself and his wife, on condition of erecting some habitable house thereon and cultivating a certain portion of the land, within ..... years, or forfeit such claim.

*Every single man*, capable of cultivating and improving the land, to be allowed one-half the above quantity, on the same conditions; and, on his marriage, to be entitled to the whole.

*For every acre of land*, so claimed and taken up, the owner or occupier to pay to government the sum of ..... annually. This assessment to be at a very low rate.

*Every foreigner*, settling at the Cape, to be allowed one-half the quantity of land that is allowed, *as before-mentioned*, to those already

settled there, or who are natural-born subjects of Great Britain; and subject to the same regulations.

*Surveyors* to be appointed by government, to survey and allot such lands, who would be guided by circumstances in allotting those that are adjoining to lands already occupied. But, in *new* districts, care should be taken that public roads are first laid out to as much advantage as the country will admit, in squares of four or six miles; and, supposing them to be *four*, the ad-measurement of the farms to be so allotted, as to begin from the front next the public road and run one mile in depth only, but as much in front as the claimant is entitled to. The other side of the square being allotted in like manner, there will be an intermediate space, two miles in breadth, of unimproved land between those improved lots; which unimproved land will increase in value proportionably to the increased value of the cultivated lots.

These *uncultivated intermedial lands* might be hereafter *sold*, by order of government, when deemed useful, and would sell according to their increased value; yet always subject to a similar ground-charge, by the acre, with the adjoining farms already allotted and improved.

The *money*, arising from the sale of such lands, to be laid out in public improvements, within the districts where the lands are situated.



three large earthen jars of water poured over my head.

One morning, finding myself exceedingly out of order two or three hours earlier than my usual time of rising, I was soon sensible, from the excessive burning heat all over me, that one of the same destructive fevers had seised me which had so rapidly carried off many of the inhabitants. I had noticed the ill success of their medical treatment, and had resolved, in case of an attack, to be my own doctor as long as it was in my power; and I had directed my servant, who came with me from Madras, accordingly. I consulted my own sensations as to what I felt desirous of being done, and my predominant wish was, that I could roll myself in snow, as I had seen the American Indians. My head, in particular, was like a ball of fire; and I apprehended approaching distraction, so as to disable me from giving sound directions. Calling my servant, therefore, who lay in an adjoining passage, I ordered him to throw a handful or two of salt petre into three earthen jars of water, and stir it as was usual for cooling our wine. As soon as this was ready, I went out and made him pour the liquor from the three jars successively over my head. I felt instant relief; and, wrapping a quilted soosee morning-gown about me, lay down again, directing my servant to cover

me with other clothes in the hope of getting into a perspiration, but without effect.

My stomach and bowels now seemed much oppressed, as if wanting relief. I was always provided with ippecacuanha, jalap, rhubarb, and salts, made up in doses: directing my servant to take two of the former, and mix ready for taking, I swallowed this double dose; and, while I laid down again, ordered a tub to be brought to the side of my cot and some very weak tamarind tea to be prepared. I suffered much before it took the least effect; at length, it came with violence nearly approaching to suffocation, nor was it long after before it likewise operated downwards. Strong as I deemed myself, I found my strength exhausting very fast; so that I could scarcely turn myself quick enough for the alternate motions, and was at last obliged to order Peter to bring in another tub. I sat over one and reached over the second, supported by my camp-cot on one side and my servant on the other. How long I kept both pumps at work I cannot say, but it appeared a terrible long time. When the reaching ceased, I drank a little mulled wine and water, well cinnamononed, but had not sufficient strength left to rise and get into my cot without help. Weak and exhausted as I was when I lay down, I felt comparative ease; and, after a while, taking a little more

mulled wine, I sunk gradually into a sound sleep.

To make short of my story, I recovered speedily, in defiance of Doctors M'C—— and M——, who, as soon as the circumstances were known from my servant, while I continued sleeping, declared I had killed myself beyond all power of redemption.

I cannot defend the rashness of my proceeding, nor do I wish to recommend its adoption by others, unless, like myself in the instance mentioned, they should be fearful of trusting to the judgement of the professional men about them, from observations of the fatality of their practice in similar cases. The patients, under the care of the doctors of the settlement, suffered in a most cruel manner, while scarcely any recovered; and, considering it as a forlorn hope, I should have preferred, to their treatment, almost any other mode that could have been recommended to me, even from a Malay doctor or Malay nurse.

For several years I had been in the constant habit of having large Cudjarce-pots of water thrown over me in a morning; and hundreds of times, during the violence of the hot land-winds on the Coast of Coromandel, when retired from company after dinner, finding it impossible to repose on account of the heat, I have seated myself on a camp-stool, in the most likely situation

to feel an air of wind in the shade; and, with nothing on but a banyan shirt and long drawers, have placed a towel soaked in water upon my head, keeping a second in a pot of cool water, close to my side, ready to place on my head as the former one ceased draining; and in this situation have I continued for an hour or two, comfortably reading a book.

In the evenings, on the parade, and in company, while all were complaining of lassitude and weariness, I felt refreshed and strong. Nor did I ever hesitate to perform these morning or afternoon ablutions, although I might have previously sacrificed a little freely to Bacchus or Venus. To such constant bathings, and still more frequent minor ablutions, I attributed my escape from fevers, when numbers around me severely suffered. And this, in some degree, may account for the ready adoption of what my sensations so strongly suggested.

Another safe cure now occurs to me, which should have been noticed in its place. On the passage from Madras to Acheen, I found that, by some means or other, I had caught a most terrible itch. For some days I was almost distracted, having nothing whatever on board to apply as a cure. The disorder increasing rapidly into large blotches, it was impossible to refrain from rubbing and scratching, by which the smart became intolerable.

I had been favoured with this disorder once before, in London, where I soon procured relief; but my London itch was a flea-bite compared to this. There was not an ounce of sulphur on board the vessel, to apply as a remedy; but it occurred, at last, that what cured the mange in a dog might be efficacious in curing the itch. Making a strong tobacco water, therefore, I stripped, and with cloths washed myself all over with it, except my eyes and the pit of my stomach.\* I performed this operation thrice a day, was tolerably easy after the first, and on the fourth or fifth day was quite well.

This, therefore, as a remedy for a most disagreeable complaint, I can and do recommend to those, who, being in a similar situation, may not be able to apply for a milder treatment. I conceive it likewise to be an excellent preventive, by washing the hands in it when the complaint is about in families, schools, &c. and, besides, a less offensive application than brimstone.

\* The private parts are always excepted, it being dangerous to bathe them.

## CHAPTER XLIX.

*Wild elephants and buffalos; an unexpected meeting; intelligence of Lieutenant D——le burning the Turkish fleet; a short account of my old shipmate's adventures.*



I BELIEVE it may be truly said, that the Settlement of Bencoolen, or Fort Marlborough, in point of unhealthiness of climate and comparative advantages to the civil and military services, is the worst in India; yet, in point of hospitality to strangers, no part of India can exceed it. I was for ever engaged to one party or another at the Presidency or up the country, and look back with wonder at the good state of my health.

In some of these excursions to the interior parts of the island, I had opportunities of seeing the wild elephant and wild buffalo, neither of which did I see, in a wild state, in India proper. One day, while at dinner at a gentleman's country-box, a herd of more than twenty of the wild elephants came full in view, moving slowly along, one after the other. As the headmost elephant was entering a wood, two or three of

our party took up muskets, loaded with ball, and fired at them. We were at too great a distance to injure them much; and, either from the report, or from some of them being struck, they instantly rushed forward into the wood with great impetuosity, and were soon out of sight; but the crackling noise of the trees and boughs, borne down by their strength and weight, was remarkable loud. I was told that the wild buffalo was by far the most dangerous animal to meet with in the island; the two or three that I saw appeared more alarmed at us, than my friend Jesse (with whom I was riding) and myself were at them.

The time fast approached for the ship's sailing, when a Malay boat came in from the northward, with some shipwrecked people they had picked up from a wreck; I accompanied some gentlemen down to the water-side, where they were on landing. One of our party stepped forward, from eager curiosity, to learn the particulars. He soon came back, saying there was a strange-looking sailor-like Malay, that spoke English, and inquired after me by name, to know if I was of Bencoolen. Before I could well express my surprise who such a person could be, the same man, with a wildness in his countenance, expressive of distress overcome by joy, ran hastily to, and, seizing one of my hands with both his, exclaimed, in good English, "Damme, my boy!

but I am glad to find you." My companions were all amazement: the few garments he had on, turban and all, were not worth a beggar's picking up: but my heart warmed the instant I heard his voice; and, pressing him to my breast, I welcomed my old early friend and shipmate B—— with tears of honest affection.

Excusing myself to the company, without explanation, I hurried him away to my quarters, and it would be a vain attempt to convey an idea of our mutual feelings and repeat our conversations that evening. We went to bed late and got up early: Peter assisted in scrubbing and cleaning him, while I over-hauled my wardrobe to select things that would best fit him. Of the three, I think I enjoyed the most solid satisfaction; yet I am conscious I looked more serious and sedate than either. My friend did nothing but laugh and make whimsical remarks on his own figure, while Peter's countenance plainly indicated unsatisfied curiosity, and in this state we sat down to breakfast.

Not long after, I had a complete levee of friends, to whom I introduced my old shipmate. He was invited and treated with tender hospitality by all my acquaintance; and, soon recruiting his strength, got rid of his way-worn countenance. During the remainder of our stay, he was much caressed for his own sake, though by many he was deemed a rattling fellow. I en-



deavoured to persuade him to go home as a passenger, but this he refused, as Captain R—, with whom I had engaged my passage, was in want of officers, and he preferred engaging as such with him.

After several years absence, without knowing or hearing what had befallen each other, we had much to communicate. I learned from my friend many particulars of the success of my relation, Lieutenant D—le, whom he had accompanied on board the Russian fleet, at the time I left England for India. Lieutenant D—le volunteered the desperate service of setting fire to the Turkish fleet, in the Isle of Scio; and, leading the three fire-ships in among the Turkish fleet lying at anchor there, through a tremendous discharge of great and small arms from the shore as well as the ships, he was severely wounded by the burst of a hand-grenade, thrown from the ship he had grappled with. A sixty-gun ship was the only one that escaped the flames; the command of which, Count Orlov, the Russian admiral, gave to D—le upon his recovery: he was afterwards farther promoted, and died an admiral in the Russian service.

My friend B— acknowledged he had refused to accompany my relation on this forlorn hope, ever after which a coolness subsisted between them; and, having no other attachment to the service, he quitted it. On his return,

finding his relations at home as obstinate as himself, he accepted a mate's berth on board an East-India ship, bound to China; but, quarrelling with the captain while at Canton, he left the ship and went on board a country-ship, belonging to Bombay, which was wrecked on the east coast of Sumatra, where the captain and most of the crew perished. Among the survivors were two Malays, to whose friendship, after they landed, he owed his own preservation.

Several months elapsed without an opportunity of getting away to any European settlement; and, having no one to converse with in English, he soon learned the Malay language. Some of the mountaineers, going down to the coast to traffic, on learning that he was an Englishman, invited him to go back with them; assuring him, that he should be at liberty to leave their mountains whenever he pleased, and might have better opportunities of descending to some of the European settlements on the western coast.

He accepted the offer, and accompanied them through such difficult defiles and passes, as, but for their assistance, it would not have been in his power to accomplish. His heart frequently sunk within him, but it was too late to repent; and the cheerfulness of his companions revived his spirits, until his severe toil and labour were amply rewarded, he said, on arriving at their place of residence, where the surrounding sce-

ery was most grand and beautiful and the air pure and fresh.

The rest of my friend's account of these upper regions of the earth, and the manners, customs, and religion, of their aboriginal inhabitants,\* I must excuse myself from relating; for, although, from my knowledge of the narrator, I might credit him, others, possibly, would not be so ready to believe at second hand.

That, from what he had undergone and suffered, together with his family differences, he should entertain thoughts of continuing where he was, may not be difficult to believe. This, he said, he had made his mind up to, when those mountaineers, whom I had met at Tappanooly, came down to the coast; and, but for the chance-note I sent, from my hearing a name so similar to his, he believed he should have settled there for life. However, the information in that note, that it was probable to find me at Bencoolen, wrought so complete a change in his mind, that he grew uneasy until another opportunity offered of descending to the coast: it was to a Malay port; he had not an article of European clothing left; and, in truth, he was better without, as he was less subject to molestation. Necessity compelled him to ship himself, as a common sailor, on board a Malay prow, for the

\* Christians and Mahometans call them heathens !

chance of her touching at an English settlement as she sailed along the coast. This vessel was wrecked on a reef of rocks, but the people were saved by another Malay prow, that brought them into Bencoolen; when, as related, I met my old friend.

---

## CHAPTER L.

*Passage from Sumatra to the Cape of Good Hope; destructive effects of the sea-scurvy; a white squall off the Cape; sickly and weak state of our ship's crew; their rapid recovery by drinking new wine.*

~~~~~

THE ship I took my passage in for England had been so long upon the coast, that many of the sailors, from a total want of vegetables with but little fresh meat, and even that coarse buffalo beef, were ill with the sea-scurvy. Our passage to the Cape of Good Hope being very tedious, we buried more than one-third of the ship's company, who sunk under this melancholy disorder. It was not at all uncommon for men, who appeared stout and hearty the day previous to their complaining to the doctor, to droop so quickly in their strength and spirits, that, within

The *money*, arising from all the ground-rents, & be considered as the revenue of the British Empire, with a per centage increase in their value every fifty years, as the value of money decreases.

No *new districts* to be allotted by the surveyors, without the concurrence of the Cape-government, who should take care that such districts were not too remote from those already improved; so that the strength of the settlement should be concentrated as much as possible.

Under the foregoing or other beneficial regulations, the settlement could not well do other than thrive; while the guardian state would share in all its advantages, besides the receipt of an increasing revenue from its ground-rents. This mode would apply to the formation of all settlements on new uncultivated lands; for, I have observed in the back lands of America, as well as elsewhere; that the greatest danger as well as difficulty, to new settlers, arises from the irregular straggling distances of settlements from each other.

Convicts, from Great Britain, might be sent to the Cape at a comparatively trivial expense, and to greater advantage than sending them to Botany-bay. They might be employed at first on any public works, until they manifested such signs of contrition and good behaviour, as to merit permission to serve the remainder of their time,

as bonded servants, to some of the settler certain wages, to be paid to government, as upon by proper officers, conditionally, that they misbehaved during such servitude, would be liable to be brought back to the works, there to expiate their offence; but they conducted themselves well, one moiety the wages, agreed to be paid to government their master or mistress, should be paid to them when their time expired; by which means, they would have both character and property to enter society with. Government should like to allot acres of land to each who chose to settle there; in which case, the other moiety of the wages should be allowed towards the building of a cottage. Punishment, which does not produce and encourage reformation, effects but little moral good to any state.

The *security*, which this settlement would give to our possessions in the East, is obvious: not only from a fleet that might be kept there in time of war, but likewise by making it a *dépôt* for troops, &c. that might be speedily sent to any required part of India.

I shall suspend a little farther the thread of my history, and conclude my observations on the Cape of Good Hope, by submitting the following opinion, viz. that there may possibly be a grand agricultural and commercial advantage derived from British colonies at the Cape, which

has not yet been contemplated by any one; a branch of trade, as important as any article of colonial commerce yet known. The latitude and climate of the Cape-territory are similar to that part of China, where teas are produced, and in all probability, the teas of Chinese growth, which we import thence at an enormous expense, would, with proper cultivation and management, prove highly productive at the Cape. The balance of trade is wholly in favour of the Chinese; a crafty people, who consider this country, and all other European powers that trade with them, as receiving instead of conferring favours. The consumption of this necessary article increasing both in Europe and America, there can be little doubt of its being a permanent article of agriculture and commerce; and it is much in favour of the experiment relative to the growth of tea at the Cape, that it might be made at no considerable expense.

CHAPTER LII.

Arrive at St Helena; singular courtship; Is Ascension; catching of turtle; short account of the interior, formed by a sub-marine volcanic island inhabited by sea-fowl, wild goats, rats; instinct of the young turtle, its many mies; an opinion respecting their food.



WE made a pleasant short passage from Cape to the Island of St Helena; our d covered with sheep and cattle, chiefly for island. Our captain found it convenient to a stay of three weeks, nor did the time ap at all heavy to us as passengers, being contin engaged in parties of pleasure to the cour houses of the governor or principal inhabita The ladies of this little island have long been marked for beauty, and with much truth believe I fell desperately in love with some these ladies, nearly twenty times while we there; but, most of them being young as we pretty, this is nothing extraordinary to re One of my courtships, however, at this isl was singular enough.

I had lodgings at Mrs P——d's, a wid lady, aged about seventy-five; her connect

being among the most respectable in the island and her property considerable. About the time we arrived, her friends were much alarmed on account of a young man lately sent out as assistant-surgeon to the settlement, to whom, it was said, the old lady was going to be married. The captain of our ship, being acquainted with her friends and informed of their fears, gave me the hint, requesting I would give my aid towards setting aside so preposterous a match as twenty-three to seventy-five; and, as it promised some diversion, I had no objection.

The best way to break off their intended match I thought would be to begin courting the old girl myself. I set to it so heartily, that, within twenty-four hours, I was her professed swain; and, before a week had passed, I persuaded the old lady to give a *fête* at her country-house, to which the governor and his lady, with most of the principal people, were invited: music and dancing on the green entertained the young and frolicsome. My mistress desired me to do the honours of the convivial board, herself and a few of the more elderly ladies keeping us company; nor were we at all sparing in our mirthful jokes on the occasion. Among other things, I thrice published the banns of marriage between the widow and myself, drinking a bumper-toast at each interval; and, as neither of the parties nor any one else forbade the banns, we were given

joy to and saluted accordingly. In one respect, we paired well enough, being both completely lame; my antient dulcinea could not well rise from her chair without help, and then made a mighty slow progress in walking, or rather hobbling, with the aid of two canes. Nor could I, though with the assistance of a crutch-cane, make a much better march of it on both legs; but, if I wanted to make progress, by taking to one leg only, I could get on, for a hundred yards or so, as well as most with two.

Matters having gone on thus rapidly with old Mother P——d and myself, and the surgeon being quite discarded, I thought it best to hold counsel with her friends, having no intention to stir a step farther. I could not agree to carry the farce on longer than while I sojourned in the island, as they wished me to do, by holding out a promise to return and consummate the marriage, after I should have settled my affairs in England. They were still jealous of the old girl's licorice gums, (for teeth she had none.) when she should find I had really deserted her; but my own opinion was, that, being thus made sensible of her folly, pride would prevent her running retrograde towards the doctor.

The ship's stay growing short, I began to retreat, by expressing fears that, as a broken-down invalid soldier, I ought not to think of matrimony, with all the consequences that might ensue

from having a young family. I delivered this with a very serious countenance, but she fairly baffled all my resolves to be grave, by as seriously answering that my crooked leg, arising from an honourable wound; could never affect the children. This was rather more than I was prepared for, and all my attempts to check a loud laugh were in vain; nor could any thing in the universe, after that, have prevented or preserved me from a similar breach of manners whenever I looked in her face. I was obliged to hop out as fast as I could; and, from the concatenation of ideas, I could not refrain from laughing whenever I thought of it or met her afterwards. I was truly sorry to be the means of mortifying the poor old soul in a way I never intended, but it was impossible to avoid it. The second day after, she excused herself from joining her boarders at table, on account of rheumatic pains, and I was not sorry that I never saw her more. In this place, however, I may as well give an account of the conclusion of the old lady's love-frolics.

I had been in England about three months, when I was accosted, in the city, by an apparent stranger, who without ceremony reminded me of rivalling him in the old lady's affections, declaring that he thought me as much in earnest as himself, until within a few days of my leaving the island; that he kept aloof for about a week

after, and then, renewing his addresses, they were soon married; but the old girl took care to secure her property. Notwithstanding this, he had so managed, by refusing to bed with her after the first week or ten days, and making free with most of her female black servants, that at last, by advice of her friends, she agreed to a separation, giving him two thousand pounds, on condition of his quitting the island and signing, under proper bonds, a complete renunciation of any future claim on her or her property, which, being all his object, he very cheerfully consented to. He then jocularly observed to me, that he hoped I would acknowledge him to be a better doctor, for the cure of old women's love-fits, than myself.

From St Helena, we ran down, with the trade-wind, to the Isle of Ascension; a scraggy barren rock, which, were it not for the famous large turtle that are caught on it, would be known but as a mark, in the middle of the ocean, to be shunned by navigators. It is 500 miles from any other land and reckoned about 28 miles in circumference.

We bestowed one whole day in exploring the interior, in detached parties, but none of us were fortunate enough to find a single spot that had soil or vegetable mould sufficient to grow a common sallad. The whole surface was covered with rough, sharp, cinder-burnt, honeycomb-

rock, except where there appeared a stream of lava, that had formerly flowed from the crater of a high mountainous pinnacle, some miles from the part of the island we were at. On this congealed lava, which terminated in the sea, we could walk very well; and, as a matter of curiosity, I regretted we could not spare time to trace it to its source.

On some of the elevated parts of the rock, we found sea-birds of all descriptions, assembled together by thousands: these spots they had selected for breeding, and were thickly covered with their dung. Those that were sitting on eggs, or with their young, did not move at the nearest approach, unless force was used. The greater part of them continued on their legs, without attempting to fly; some walking or waddling about and others standing; but all joined in such an incessant Babel-like noise, that we could scarcely hear what each other said. We took away a considerable number of eggs; and, had the birds been worth any thing, we could have taken away hundreds of them, either by catching them with our hands or knocking them down with our sticks. I made a prisoner of one tropic-bird, on account of its beautiful long plumage, with its two young, entertaining a hope of keeping one or the other alive, but I did not succeed.

We found some purslane growing in places, and a low kind of bushes, which were all the vegetable productions we could discover that the wild goats of the island had to live upon. Two or three of these animals, which some of our sailors had run down for sport, were the most miserable-looking, shaggy, lean, creatures I ever saw, and stunk worse than pole-cats.

The turtle that we caught made us ample amends. We divided into two companies; taking separate bays, and lying on the sands all night, in order to turn the turtle as they came up on the beach to lay their eggs in deep holes, which they scoop out in the sand with their fins. We caught fourteen thus, the smallest of which weighed more than two hundred pounds.

I conceive, from every appearance on and about this island, and its great distance from the two continents of Africa and America, that it must have been formed by a sub-marine volcano; and, from its slight progress towards the attainment of a soil, or earth, on its surface, must (when compared with other volcanic island-) have been of as recent formation as most that are known. Yet the slight variation of its surface, that has been noticed since its discovery, denotes it to have remained nearly in its present state for many centuries.

The shores of this island abound with rats; and, by the thousands of little skeleton turtle-

shells, scattered on the top of the beach, I fancied them the principal food they had to subsist on. These animals, when they are first hatched by the heat of the sun upon the sand wherein they are hid, are not bigger than the palm of a man's hand. Having cleared themselves of the sand, instinct immediately directs them to scamper down the beach to get into the sea: but they have three powerful enemies on the watch to intercept them; the birds, hovering in the air; the rats, on the look-out on the sand; and voracious fish, equally destructive, who wait in readiness to devour them on their first entrance into the watery element.

To see thousands of eggs, the produce of one turtle, a person would be apt to imagine that the sea must swarm with them; but, when we observe their numerous enemies, from each of the three elements, attacking them the instant they are burst from their leather-like shell, it then appears as extraordinary that so many should escape. I have watched the fish, lying in wait for their prey, and cruising about at the edge of the outer surf, with the water as transparent as glass; when, if the little animal swims in ever so small a degree above the sandy bottom, they dart at it with almost a certainty of devouring. Its safety, while so young, small, and tender, appeared (so long as I could trace with my eye into deeper water) to be, in keeping close upon

the sandy bottom, where it seemed to half its little body, while, by its fins, it crept imperceptibly along into deep water.

I am inclined to think that the turtle subsists by grazing on the great variety of seaweeds, not of coral, growing at the bottom of the sea, and likewise on some of the species of shellfish and slow-moving insects found there: an opportunity which the strength of their bills seems to enable them to take advantage of.

CHAPTER LIII.

Landed at Plymouth; my salutation; Brought news with the ship; the smell of tobacco very offensive after a long absence: introduced respecting my wounded leg; Surgeon Sharp did advice.



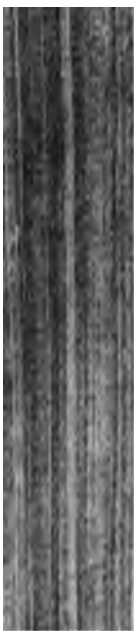
THE remainder of our passage to Europe was nothing remarkable; our ship's company remaining in good health and free from scurvy, so good a recruit at the Cape. I landed at Plymouth, after an absence of some years from

England, sound and firm in heart, but no longer the "*gallant, gay, Iothario*" of former times.

It was on a beautiful summer's afternoon, one Sunday, early in July: my heart was as light as a feather, but one of my heels was too heavy to attempt cutting frolicsome capers with the many tempting, rosy, healthy-looking, damsels we met on our first landing. Curiosity, perhaps, had drawn together more than usual, from its being known that we were from the two East-India ships still in sight.

My companion was a super-cargo from China, out of another ship, the two ships having kept company from St Helena. I believe he thought me crazy; for, the instant I stepped on *terra firma*, I made a dead halt, to look round and admire the lovely groups of smiling tittering lasses there assembled. I was in a beauish kind of embroidered regimentals, and did homage to them all by my hat, blessing them and my own fortunate stars, for favouring me with so flattering a prospect on returning to the land of beauty.

Then, selecting a cluster of three merry-looking wenches, I marched up to them; and, taking one by the hand, I addressed the three with, "My dear lovely girls! let me hail it as a happy omen, after so long an absence, that, instead of kissing my native earth as I intended on first landing, I may be permitted to salute some of its fairest fruit." And then, without farther cere-



and gave three cheers. I made my
and stumped along as happy and proud
peror. Nor had the good-natured gi
son to fear being laughed at; for,
new silk handkerchiefs in my pockets
ed another of my companion, and
each to accept one as a token of rei
But I could not persuade my compa
low my example in the salutation.

My friend B——, who had most
steadily adhered to the duty of the
officer, from his first going on board
was now, owing to deaths, second
board under the captain, who placed
fidence in him. His determination
was to remain with the ship until sh
charged her cargo in the river; and,
time, I was to make certain inqui.

in that article we may possibly be thought to have been fantastical in the extreme, by those who have never resided long in hot climates. Four really good mould-candles were placed upon our table at night; the smell of which was as insupportable as it would be to any lady or gentleman to enter into a tallow-chandler's workshop, while boiling. We were obliged to order them away, and to have wax candles brought in lieu.

The time of year was pleasant, every thing appeared delightful, and we travelled leisurely to enjoy it all; but, forgetting to give orders to the contrary, our olfactory nerves were sure to be offended every night by very good mould tallow candles. We laughed heartily at ourselves, well aware that it would be attributed to whimsicality and pride, and that we should be looked upon as Indian nabobs, loaded with more money than we knew what to do with, and charged in the reckonings accordingly.

My companion, I believe, was well enough escorted home by Dame Fortune, but it was the young lady, *Miss Fortune*, who was my hand-maid. Yet I am satisfied, that a stranger to us both, judging by our looks, actions, and flow of animal spirits, would have thought the reverse. Nor could any one have conceived, that it was my full expectation and intention, at that time, to undergo the amputation of my left leg, as soon as I could procure the best chirurgical as-

sistance for that purpose in London: for, the limb being rather a clog than a help, I had made my mind up, before I left India, if it promised no better on my arrival in England, to have it cut off and to throw it away as an encumbrance.

For this purpose, the day after I reached London, I waited on Surgeon Sharp, who received me with a liberality and philanthropy of disposition never to be erased from my memory. He inquired minutely into every circumstance of the wound, the surgical aid, and the length of time I had suffered under various operations in India; and, having examined the shattered limb, he said I had been treated with great justice, and his only surprise was, that the surgeons had attempted to save the limb at all, especially in so hot a climate. He then literally *gave* me his opinion, (for he refused taking any *fee*,) that the change of climate, aided by a sound strong constitution, was likely to do better for me than all the surgeons in London. At any rate, he said, it was worthy of trial for a month or two, when, if I found no benefit, it would be time enough to cast it away. I followed his advice; and, gaining strength rapidly, I was soon satisfied, that, crippled as it was, it was preferable to a jury-leg.

CHAPTER LIV.

Curious adventure of Byrn with the celebrated Miss Kennedy.

My capability of a future active military life was passed, and the consideration now was, what other occupation I could best pursue. Before I had determined this point, I engaged in a serious courtship, that terminated in marriage. This was not long about, yet I might probably have thought it very tedious, if a small adventure had not occurred, that helped to fill up some of my leisure time; and indeed it almost seemed, that, though I had given over travelling in search of adventures, they were determined to find me out.

During my stay at the Cape of Good Hope, two British officers, who said they had quitted the service in Bengal on account of ill health, made acquaintance with me during the time I continued, and there I left them. They were straitened for cash, and I supplied them; taking a bill from one of them on his father, old General D——rs, of whom I had a slight knowledge. After my arrival, I had sent it for acceptance,

but it was refused, nor could I ever get it paid. In about six weeks, I heard of their arrival in England, and left notes for them with my address.

One of them, an Irishman, whom I shall designate by the name of Byrn, called upon me, expressing fears that his friend D——rs was no better than he ought to be. “But, my dear fellow,” says Byrn, “to be sure I hold myself bound to see you repaid the whole of what you advanced for us at the Cape; so make yourself easy about that and give me joy into the bargain, for it is no trifle of good news I have to tell you.” I listened with attention to a strange long story of his having left his father, (a man, as he said, of very large property in Ireland,) owing to a serious quarrel between his elder brother and himself, which had occasioned his being in the army nearly five years in India; that, soon after he parted from him at the Cape, he received letters from his father, that had been sent round by Bengal, informing him of his brother’s death and earnestly desiring his return; that he had accordingly transmitted to his father his intention of taking his passage to England by the next ship, and hoped to find letters of credit to meet him in London upon his arrival, that he might appear as his son. All this, he said, had been done beyond his expectations; for his father was so rejoiced, and having some business to

at in London, that he had directed him to a fashionable house for three months, to use a carriage and horses, and hire servants, suitable to it. To accomplish all this, he said that he had already received a remittance of three thousand pounds.

I did not believe a single word he said; but he went on, saying he had that morning made an extraordinary good purchase, from a lady of fortune, of all her rich furniture, plate, chariot, and horses: he was to dine with her that day, and to settle for them in the evening, when he desired me much to accompany him and give my opinion of his bargain.

My curiosity was excited, but I declined it, and was not engaged. He gave me two cards of address, the one, very decent apartments in the Strand, where he had resided since his arrival; the other, in Newman-street, where he had made his new purchase. He then inquired if I was engaged the next day; and, on my assuring him I was going down to Deptford, with an intent to spend most of the day with a particular friend on board the ship I came home in, he begged I would allow him to drive me thither in his carriage, as he much wished to go on board the vessel that brought him from the Cape, which was to lay at Deptford. To this I readily assented, provided he came early. "Be sure I say Byrn; only tell me your breakfast-

hour, and you may say I'll be with you before you can put your *crame* into the *tay*."

He was as good as his word; for, precisely at the time, there was a thundering rap at my humble door; and, looking out at the window, I saw him step from a very handsome chariot, with a pair of nice horses; a coachman and two footmen, in rich silver-laced liveries, attending. He was completely at home, and as intimate with my brother and sister (whose house I was at) in five minutes, as if he had known them for five years. With a most comfortable assurance, he had a great deal to say, with no small mixture of the *brogue* in his speech, that made him highly entertaining to those who were not accustomed to it. My sister, who was a merry-hearted one, could with difficulty make the breakfast, alternately laughing and apologising. He tried to persuade her to accompany us, and she seemed willing, but I objected to it.

We drove to Deptford, and each went on board his respective ship. In little more than two hours, he came to me, saying he had finished all his business. He dined with us, and said he was determined to give a good house-warming before his father arrived; and, considering me as his most particular friend in England, (where he had never been before he landed from the ship that brought him from the Cape,) he requested me to name any early day, that would

suit myself and friends that were present, to favour him with our company. An evening was accordingly fixed on, when he was in hopes, he said, of getting Lord C——, and a few other gentlemen from Ireland, to meet and make a jolly evening of it. He drove me home again; and, at parting, said he had omitted to put cash enough in his pocket to repay the money borrowed by him and D——rs, but desired me to remind him on the appointed evening, should he not see me in the mean time.

On the day appointed, we were tolerably punctual, yet we found a considerable company of ladies and gentlemen already assembled. I remarked a superb sideboard of plate, as we were ushered along by servants in new and elegant liveries. Curiosity and astonishment increased at every step: double folding-doors, lined with green and gold, opened into a handsome drawing-room.

My name being announced, Mr Byrn was ready to receive me; and, leading me up, with a half whisper, said, the lady of whom he had taken the house, furniture, &c. had done him the honour to stay and perform the honours of the house that evening. He then introduced me to a very handsome woman, with a remarkably fine prepossessing presence, and elegantly dressed. Her name I could not immediately catch, but I found that mine was quite familiar to her; and,

after a general introduction to the whole company, among whom a count and a knight or two were mentioned, I was complimented with a seat at the lady's right hand.

A band of music soon struck up, and the bewitching charms of several beautiful women made it impossible to resist the temptation to dance. On a challenge from my fair hostess, I pointed (faintly) to my game leg. "Oh! never mind," she said; "I have heard, from your friend Byrn, of your agility in dancing on one leg with the ladies at the Cape, and I hope you will not refuse to your country-women what you sported so freely with the Dutch lasses." There was no refusing such a challenge, and I did my best for a few dances, claiming long intervals.

Between the dances, I found myself much attended to by some of the more elderly gentlemen, who seemed earnest in pressing their eulogiums on the liberality and generosity of Mr Byrn; endeavouring, by side-wind questions, to learn how long I had been acquainted with him in India, and admiring his good fortune in having so soon acquired a handsome property there. I listened coolly to all that was said; and, beginning to smell the rat, I answered cautiously though with apparent carelessness.

After a while, I learned who our lovely hostess was, no less than the celebrated Miss Kennedy; but I could no way make out their allusions

to Byrn's great generosity, or what his drift could be. It was evident that there was some false play, and I had no doubt I was introduced to give it a covering. I determined to explore the mystery, if possible, before I went away, and then conduct myself accordingly. I found it too delicate a matter to open my mind to any one, but I listened attentively to all that was said by Byrn, Miss Kennedy, the company at large, or the friends who accompanied me: to the latter, when they whispered any surprise at the extravagant costliness of the whole, my answer was, "*Vive la bagatelle*, never mind, who's afraid?" and I entered as much as possible into the full gaiety of the evening.

We sat down to a most costly supper at one o'clock. I was seated close by my hostess; the glass circulated briskly, and my friend Byrn became very jocular: at length, thrown a little off his guard as I suppose, he desired me to take care of his *wife* and help her to some pine-apple, of which he knew she was fond. This might have passed as a jocular expression; but a gentleman, getting up, said that, as our kind host had himself let the cat out of the bag, he should propose the health of the bride and bridegroom, Mr and Mrs Byrn, in a bumper: this was done with great glee, and Mr Byrn with the *ci-devant* Miss Kennedy returned thanks. During the loud hilarity that succeeded, I asked her seriously

if it were true that they were married. "Yes," she replied. "I am sorry for it," I rejoined. She replied, "You alarm me." — "Come," said I, "take a glass of wine with me to prevent notice, while, in few words, I advise you to summon that courage which your situation in life must have given you, and do not let it be seen that you are in the least discomposed; otherwise, Byrn will be jealous of my disclosing what he wishes to conceal." I then assured her that it was my firm belief he was not worth a shilling, and that he had some bad design against any property she had in her possession; that I acquainted her thus early, to put her on her guard and remove every impression of credit given to him on the score of my acquaintance, which it was evident he had been base enough thus to endeavour to establish. I added, "Now lose no time, jump up as in choice spirits, challenging the young and lively to recommence dancing, while your husband keeps the bottle circulating, for the honour of Ireland, with those who prefer it." This she, with good management, immediately executed; and, during the bustle of moving, I desired her to consult with any of the gentlemen she could depend on as her friends, when, if they thought it politic, I had no objection to avow all I had said and expose him immediately.

In about half an hour, three charming young romps came in; and, saying they were determined I should indulge each of them with a one-legged dance, fairly forced me along with them. This afforded an opportunity, after the first dance, of stepping aside for a few minutes, when I was informed the result of the consultation was, to let every thing pass quietly on, to prevent his suspecting he was discovered, until measures could be taken the next morning to prevent his using that power, which, as her husband, (they had been married that same day,) he could now claim over all her property of plate, jewels, furniture, carriage, and horses. I promised to come forward at any time and confront him, if he denied his lies to me concerning his father and the remittance from Ireland, opposed to his lies to her and her friends, of his coming home from India with a handsome fortune.

From the particulars of his deceptions, which I became acquainted with afterwards, it appeared that, when he landed at Portsmouth, as a *gentleman* from India, he found means to introduce himself to Lord C——, who chanced to be at the same inn, giving his lordship to understand that he had been very successful in India; that, as the settling his affairs would detain him sometime in London, a place he was a stranger to, and being a young man, he might be likely enough to seek pleasure among the ladies; but,

to have his arms engraven thereon. His plan appeared, therefore, to convert all he could into cash, and make off. To prevent his having any opportunity or time to do mischief, he was arrested, the next day, at the suit of her principal creditors, and told in plain terms the reason. Finding himself detected, he no longer pretended to carry on the farce of being a man of property, but attempted another, equally untenable, which was, to persuade his dear wife that it was pure love which made him desperate.

Being soon convinced that his dear wife was not to be cajoled a second time, he threw himself on the clemency of her creditors, saying he was ready to do any thing they or his wife required of him. Her fears were, lest her visiting friends should hear of her having a husband, and become shy on that account. He was therefore kept close in a spunging-house for some time, until very strong articles were drawn up for him to execute, with suitable bonds that would lay him in jail for life if forfeited: by these, he renounced all claim whatever to her or her property, and bound himself to leave the kingdom for ever. To enable him to do this, she obtained for him a commission in a regiment stationed in Africa, for which she equipped him very liberally and some of her trade-friends saw him safely embarked. Thus both the marriage and finale

were managed so well, as to be kept secret without injury to the lady's reputation.

CHAPTER LV.

*Reconcile my old ship-mate B—— to his family;
my reception at the secretary-of-state's office.*

~~~~~

MY application and attention to my friend B——'s affairs with his relations proved favourable. I made them acquainted with what he had endured, and that I was persuaded he would persevere in a complete seclusion from his family, unless some advances towards a reconciliation were made him through me. I found they had suffered a good deal from the uncertainty of what was become of him for several years; nor did I acquaint them where he then was, until I perceived a strong inclination on their part to be reconciled. This made all things easy, and I had the pleasure of introducing my friend to the bosom of his own family.

I had been a few months in England and repeatedly called on Lord H——b, then secretary-of-state, to deliver letters from gentlemen in

India, in high situations there, which I had promised not to part with but into his lordship's own hands. Though the time of my calling for that purpose was early, and I had dressed myself in my best, as a compliment I thought due to his lordship, I was regularly told, by the porter, that his lordship was not at home. At length, I became as indifferent about the delivery, as they seemed to be about the receipt, of the letters; and, without getting out of the chair or coach, as it might be, when passing that way, I said I had letters to deliver, but would not leave them.

Resolved at last to bring it to some conclusion, I called in a hackney-coach one day, as I was passing on other business; and, getting out, I demanded, in a careless kind of authoritative tone, if his lordship was at home. "No," was the reply. "Then let me see some person who, in his lordship's absence, attends to give an answer on business." By this time, there were seven or eight footmen gathered; and I observed them eyeing my dress, which was plain enough that day, and I suppose they likewise noticed my common hackney-coach, calculating what kind of answer I merited. Raising my voice, I ordered them to shew me into a room and send some one of the upper servants to me. This was done: his lordship's gentleman attended, to whom I observed how often I had called and for what purpose; adding, I was going out of town



and might be absent for months, so that, if I could not deliver the letters from his lordship's friends then, it was uncertain how long it might be. I was desired to be seated for a minute: he soon returned with his lordship's compliments, requesting I would wait a few minutes longer, being then engaged with the Marquis of T——.

When I delivered the letters, I acquainted his lordship the cause of his not receiving them sooner. Having read one letter, he politely said that he found his was the greatest loss, as I was particularly referred to for giving him fuller information on subjects therein mentioned. This appeared curious enough to me, who had never understood there was any such reference, or on what subjects. I could only say, his lordship should be welcome to any information in my power. I was desired to amuse myself with a beautiful aviary of curious birds, that the lately-deceased Lady H—— had been fond of, while his lordship perused the letters.

He kept me nearly an hour and a half afterwards, in close conversation on various subjects relative to India; requesting I would call again whenever I had an opportunity, or wished to see him. I again hinted the difficulty I had experienced in obtaining the present interview. He smiled, observing there would be no difficulty in future, as his servants would now know that I came rather to confer than solicit favours.

I could not forbear smiling, in turn, at the conceit which shot across my mind, that a nobleman of his rank should consider an invalid half-pay lieutenant as the person conferring obligations on the premier of England. I answered, that, at any time his lordship might wish to see and converse farther, I would attend his commands.

Retiring to my poor hack, I could scarcely keep my countenance at the obsequious attendance of the same fellows, who had at first measured me with their eyes on my entrance into the lobby. The porter in particular, with his slate, requested the honour of my address: I indulged him with my name and place of abode in the country, leaving him to affix what rank he pleased to the cockade in my hat.

My friends thought me much to blame in not calling again upon his lordship; but, as I never received any fresh intimation, I could not endure the appearance of dancing attendance, as if a solicitor for favours. I do not pretend to justify this; it may be reckoned a fastidious pride, which I had no right to assume. Be it so: I shall not dispute it, and have only to say, that, through life, I have so often experienced the same principle governing within, that I can account for it in no other way than its being the nature of the animal; and, having travelled on

very fairly without such obsequiousness, I have never lamented it.

---

## CHAPTER LVI.

*Happily married; irreparable loss of wife and child within a year.*

~~~~~

SCENES and struggles, far different from those which I had ever been accustomed to, were now preparing for me. Without disparagement to any others of the fair sex, I was most happily united to one of the best and most amiable of women, with a mind so truly angelic, so wonderfully pure, that, though there may be others (I hope many) equally so, I feel confident none ever exceeded, in all the female virtues, my beloved Sarah.

One short year, only, was allotted me to enjoy such perfect domestic felicity as it would be difficult to parallel. My wife, my child, were both suddenly torn from me within the month after she was brought to bed. Those, and those only, who have experienced such a loss, know how to appreciate my mental sufferings on the occasion.

CHAPTER LVII.

Unsettled; commence underwriter at Lloyd's; no losses, yet give it up; marry again; engage largely in farming, and in an extensive liquor-business; misfortunes of my wife's father.

I HAD commenced farming, upon a small scale, on the spot where I was born; to which I took so strong a liking, that I had engaged for another farm, pretty near where I lived, when my domestic happiness was so completely wrecked. In order, therefore, to divert my thoughts and prevent a gloom from settling on my mind, I gave up house-keeping, and with my horse and servant visited different counties, continually changing the scene for a few months; until, tired of so sauntering a life, without any fixed object, I returned to the metropolis, on the invitation of a relation older than myself; who, being a considerable underwriter at Lloyd's, pressed me much to engage in the same way, as an advantageous employ that would wholesomely fill up my time.

I attended to see the nature of it, and was introduced by him to various merchants and brokers, not merely as his relation but as a practical seaman, well acquainted with the nature and

risks of different voyages; a knowledge, at that time, rather scanty among the underwriters.

I was favourably received, and have no doubt but I might have done well; but mere hazard of money for money did not accord with my feelings. And, although I never feared buffeting real storms and tempests, I soon began to find my pillow was not so easy and pleasant as it had been, owing to imaginary dreams of them.

I was convinced the mere making of money, without some personal prowess or merit of active ingenuity, would never make me happy. On the other hand, the chance of being entirely ruined, now that I was an invalid and rendered incapable of my former exertions, damped my spirits. In short, I discovered I was not calculated for a gambler; I therefore made my bow and quitted Lloyd's, leaving my relation to settle the profit and loss of the little I had done. Fortunately, this turned out better than could have been expected, all profit and no loss, which I believe few underwriters can say.

The spring and spirit of exertion seemed to relax after the conclusion of my matrimonial comforts, and I indulged a longing wish for a renewal. Nor was it long before I turned my thoughts that way, and found another blooming helpmate, who proved a worthy successor of my first wife; but, unhappily for us both, the misfortunes of her family proved a great drawback

on our felicity. At the time of our marriage, it was my full intention to employ myself in farming only, and I was building and fitting up my house, on a newly-engaged farm, accordingly; but circumstances occurred, that induced me to engage in an extensive liquor-business, with a younger brother.* Thinking it improper, when in the pursuit of trade, to sport my carriage, I laid it down, though I continued my farming.

Within a few months after our marriage, my father-in-law became a bankrupt for more than sixty thousand pounds. He was my banker at the time, and a letter by the post was the first intimation I had of the likelihood of such a misfortune; it enclosed a bill for something more than the balance due to me, with these few words: "I send you this, which a short time will explain." In the hurry of sending it, the letter was unsealed, but it came safe.

The thing was too evident to need much explanation; and, taking a post-chaise, I told my wife what she must expect to find on our arrival at her father's. It proved so bad a failure, that the unhappy man never could procure a certificate. He had, however, behaved so honourably to me in remitting what I had entrusted him with as my banker, that, in addition to the close

* This was one of the most eventful mistakes of my life; which, for the chance of saving others from certain ruin, eventually proved a cause of most of the hard struggles I afterwards endured.

connection I had formed, I was desirous of giving him and the family every assistance in my power, considering him as an unfortunate but an honest man. I did not hesitate, therefore, to aid him with money and credit, to enable him to trade in some borrowed name until his affairs could be settled. For a long time, I found him punctual and correct, and was happy to be thus the means of enabling him to support his family.

CHAPTER LVIII.

*Arrested for 1200*l*. by a man I never saw nor heard of.*

~~~~~

THE first check I received was rather extraordinary. To the nature of his concern I was an entire stranger; understanding that, from his situation as an uncertificated bankrupt, secrecy was necessary, I relied entirely on his honour. But I did not relish being roused out of my bed, at one o'clock in the morning, by an express from London, with a letter from him, dated Woodstreet Compter, informing me that a writ was

out against me for 1200*l.* at the suit of a man with a hard foreign name, which I never heard of before; that he himself was arrested for a similar sum by the same person; that the officer would be down in the city the next forenoon to arrest me, which he warned me of.

I was as much surprised as at the first intimation of the bankruptcy, and inquired of my wife if she knew or ever heard of a man of that name. She replied in the negative; and, dismissing the express, I went to bed again; but, my efforts to get to sleep being in vain, I ordered my horse, and rode upwards of five miles to breakfast with a relation, whom I was informed of the business as far as I was myself acquainted with it. On his inquiring in what manner I meant to proceed, I said my intention was to request him to accompany me to the Compter, inquire the cause, and give bail if necessary. On his remarking that he thought it a bold proceeding, I observed that I had, on several occasions, found it best and safest to face the danger.

Calling on another friend in our way, we proceeded to the Compter; and, inquiring of the clerk if such a writ was issued, understood an officer (then present) was just going off to execute it. I said I was the person against whom the writ was taken, and, having heard



came prepared to give the necessary bail. This done, I inquired if they knew any thing of the person that sued out the writ. They said he appeared, by his dialect, to be a foreigner, and was attended by an attorney. They well remembered the man, from the shabby figure he made when swearing to debts of 1200*l.* against three different gentlemen, and particularly remarked his shoes to be so much worn that his naked feet appeared through them.

I next inquired for my father-in-law, Mr R——, and was shewn to his apartment: from him I learned that this man had been employed by him as a servant; that he detected him in robbing him to a considerable amount; and that the fellow, being apprehensive of the consequence, had, by the aid and advice of an attorney, sworn the debt against his master, merely to obtain time for escape during the arrest. And farthermore, from a knowledge of his master's situation, he conceived that the only two persons likely to bail him were myself and the broker who managed his business: to procrastinate the bail, he had sworn to similar debts against us, and it answered his purpose, for we never heard any thing more of the scoundrel.

I thought then, and still continue to think, that some remedy should be provided to guard against such vexatious and false arrests; for, as the law of arrests for debt now stands, a man of

reputation and property, in an extensive line of business, may be ruined from the injury done to his credit by a false arrest to a large amount, which any malicious wicked villain, not to be found afterwards, may chuse to swear against him.

---

## CHAPTER LIX.

*Threatened to be arrested for 4500l. my father-in-law's debts; serious alternative of sacrificing a considerable property or hanging him.*

~~~~~

I DID not relish so free a participation of another man's troubles; yet, bad as this had been, worse soon followed. Having indulged him, from time to time, with such running cash as I could spare, as well as my notes at two or three months, which he provided for as they became due at my banker's, I gave him notice when I should want it again, and he had in general been punctual. But one day, when he was to meet me at an inn to repay me 200l. I received a letter from him, acquainting me he was obliged to

keep out of the way, for fear lest his broker, Mr C——, should arrest him.

I had frequently, when in town, dined with both at a tavern, and so far was acquainted with C——. I therefore went directly to his house, to inquire the cause. With an affected unconcern, he turned over the leaves of his ledger until he came to an account, at the head of which stood my own name; and, pointing with his finger for me to see it, he said, “The balance of this account, which stands in your name, is 4500*l.* and odd; which, if your friend does not pay me very soon, you must.”

At first, I hardly knew how to keep within bounds; but, as soon as I could collect myself, I asked how he could suppose me so egregious a fool as to believe, that, merely from his placing my name at the head of an account, I should become liable to pay it. His answer was, that my notes, which I so frequently gave my friend to purchase goods with, made payable to him (C——) and others, would prove my being concerned, &c. At this time, I knew he had two notes of mine, for 150*l.* each, which I acknowledged must be paid as they came due, and, as to any thing farther, I set him at defiance. He desired me to consider coolly of the business, and meet him on the ensuing day; observing, that it would be better to settle it quietly, as, *although he believed me to be a man of property,*

it might injure my credit in an extensive line of business. I understood the threat, and, promising to meet him agreeably to his proposal, I retired to my inn for half an hour, to consider what was best to be done.

I had some bills of my own coming due the next day, which, from the disappointment of the 200*l.* were not quite provided for. I could, at a word, have procured this money from many; but, in the situation in which I should be placed if C—— put his threats in execution, I could not reconcile myself to borrow. It was, however, necessary to provide for them, and at last I applied to the merchant to whom the largest note was due; telling him, that, from a sudden disappointment, I was not provided for his note, and requesting his assistance of 150*l.* for the purpose. This was done directly, he laughing at my squeamishness in asking for it.

When I had thus settled my own money matters, I again retired to consider: the intention of C—— was evidently to *alarm* me with the fear of injury to my credit with those connected with me in business. I took my measures accordingly, and went round to every merchant with whom I had connections, and acquainted them with the exact state of things. They were pleased with this openness of conduct, and offered every assistance as to giving bail, &c.

should C—— be hardy enough to execute his threats.

We met at the appointed time, when he told me he had consulted his attorney, who was clearly of opinion I was liable to pay the whole debt; but he added, as he did not wish to injure my credit, that he would make it as easy as possible, by receiving it in such instalments as would be most convenient. I cut the matter short, assuring him, when I did pay, it should be altogether, but that I did not mean to pay one shilling of it without being compelled; and, as to any injury he supposed my credit might suffer, I would now inform him I had guarded against that, having benefited by the threatening hint he had given the day before; that I had already called upon all whom my credit concerned, and acquainted them with the business; moreover, that they had authorised me to tell him, instead of being uneasy, they were ready to give me every necessary support, by bail, &c. I added, he might therefore follow his attorney's directions as soon as he thought proper, and I had only to request him to proceed against me as a gentleman who meant to meet the question fairly. His disappointment was evident; and, finding he could make no impression on me as to the book-debt, he said he either misunderstood me or I was greatly deceived as to the number and amount of my notes which he had by him; for,

on examination, he found he had notes of mine to the amount of 1400/. I said that was impossible, well knowing there were no other than the two which I had mentioned. What was my surprise, then, to see him open his pocket-book and take out notes, *in my name*, to that amount!

I requested a moment's pause, and asked if he received those notes himself from the party. He replied affirmatively. I examined them; and, though they were well enough executed to mislead an indifferent person at first sight, I had no difficulty in discovering the hand-writing. I then observed to him, that those which I acknowledged were made payable at my banker's and the others were not. To this he answered, that the person had told him I did not chuse to have so many of those notes carried to my banker's; that they were, therefore, made payable at his counting-house; and that he had frequently had such notes before, which were generally taken up a few days before they became due. I assured him the notes were not of my writing, which, by a close inspection, he might convince himself of, nor had I any knowledge of their existence. "Why, then," said C——, "if the money be not paid for all these notes, the forger of them shall hang."

We were both silent for some time. He then began, "Sir, I know that the lease of the soap-house and of the place where he lives were

bought in your name, and I suppose you have them as securities for your money. — “Just so.” — “Then, sir, I make this proposition: let them, with what is on the premises, be made over to me in lieu of the notes, or the party, if to be found alive, shall be in goal before this time to-morrow.” — “Mr C——, this is so unexpected and very serious a discovery, that I will not undertake to give an answer before to-morrow morning.” — “Will you promise me, on your honour,” said C——, “that you will not by any means give the person notice to get away.” I assured him I knew not where he was; that I had wished much to see him, but understood he was afraid to meet me; that I believed his wife knew, and if possible I meant to see him before ten o’clock the next morning; and that I would not, on my honour, acquaint the person nor any one else with any matter or thing that might urge him to flight, before I met him again at the time appointed to give my answer. We then parted.

There was no doubt as to the fact of what this unhappy man had done: inquiries why he had so done would now prove useless, the consequences being inevitable if once made public. With difficulty I procured a meeting; he trembled as if going to receive sentence of death, and but little passed at the interview. I returned to my wife, who was on a visit at her mother’s,

and embraced her and my child with considerable agitation, but declined accounting for it, retiring to consider what I ought to do. I had to sacrifice property to a considerable amount, or hang my wife's father and bid adieu to domestic happiness! I made my mind up to relinquish property for the preservation of domestic peace and comfort.

CHAPTER LX.

Quit mercantile concerns; retire solely to farming; difference of living in the country within the last fifty years.

~~~~~

SOON after this, I gave up my large concern in the wine and spirit trade, retiring to my farm, which I grew more and more delighted with. I resided for several years on my native spot, endeavouring to improve in the practical knowledge of farming, by the aid and information of some of the best plough-farmers in England.

My leisure time was occupied in endeavouring to bring forward and promote such plans, societies, &c. as I thought would be conducive to



**public benefit and convenience, and most likely to harmonise and bring together families and neighbours who knew little of each other but by name; thus improving the understanding by an extended knowledge of men and things.**

The part of the country I am speaking of was within fifty miles of the metropolis, yet it was, comparatively, but little known. Looking back about forty years, I do not recollect more than eight single-horse chaises in the whole district, consisting of twenty-seven opulent parishes; and there are now few farmers, holding 200 acres of land, who do not keep their chaises, and some their four-wheel carriages. Women and young people had little or no society but among their relations; and the convivial meetings of the men, either at home or abroad, consisted chiefly in trying whose head was hardest at drinking flip or punch, sitting all the time enveloped in a thick atmosphere of tobacco-smoke.

At one of the earliest public meetings I attended, after becoming a resident, about thirty people were crowded together in a room, the ceiling of which I could reach with my knuckles, and all but one were smoking. A farmer came in, fresh from the air, wishing to speak with the gentleman who did not smoke; and, having passed with difficulty to the back of his chair, on opening his mouth to speak, he was half strangled by the smoke. After several minutes

attempting in vain to say what he wanted, he abruptly asked the gentleman, if he could remain there without smoking in his own defence; and, on his saying, "Yes, pretty well, Master Hunwix, by use." — "Why, then, by God, sir," says Hunwix, "you may bid the devil kiss your ....." I merely repeat this, to convey a stronger idea of the suffocating atmosphere these gentlemen of the country could sit and enjoy themselves in.

Mixed societies of sexes and families were chiefly confined to meetings at fairs, and a few horse or jack-ass races in the summer; but two or three families ever thinking to treat the young people with a dance. The roads, likewise, through most of the parishes, were almost impassable, and were considered by the farmers as the best security against a rise of their rents by the landlords; since, from the fear of breaking their necks or catching an ague, which was reported to hang on every bush, very few ever visited their estates more than once in their lives, and many not at all. When the turnpike-road, therefore, was first introduced, the farmers conceived the country would be ruined; and, as my father was the principal means of obtaining the turnpike, I have often heard him much censured for it. It is true, that most of the farms have been raised to double, treble, and some quadruple, the former rents, within my remembrance; but

This is not so much owing to the landlords coming down to the farm, as to the tenants riding up to the landlord and bidding against each other. Nor has the rise of rent, when taken fairly with other circumstances, operated against the farmers interest; for, speaking generally, I am persuaded the farmers throughout the district gain more money yearly, at the present time; than they did at the former low rents. Whether they accumulate and save as much is a different question; but where can be found another district, of more than twenty miles in extent, without manufactory, commerce, or even thoroughfare, where they live half so generously and well? Nor do I think that any of them would like to exchange their present conveniences, and pleasant, social, mixed, meetings, which harmonise and smooth the rugged path of life, for all the fancied advantages their fore-fathers had in the rent of the land.

I am delivering my opinion as it was ten or twelve years back, when I left the country, and do not mean to include those farms which have been let at the extravagant high rents of late years prevalent all over the kingdom; for, I consider many of them as contracts made between fools and madmen, which must terminate accordingly.

## CHAPTER LXI.

*Anecdotes of worthy clergymen; poetical order of  
wine; suitable answer.*



It may appear a little singular, in so rich corn-country, formerly well stocked with game, with no great men to obstruct any fair sportsmen, and so near the metropolis, that so few clergymen should be found to reside on the livings. During the many years I knew the country, I do not remember more than three constant residents at any one time, and those were livings of the lowest value in the district.

It is not my wish to criticise the motives of that reverend body, whose general as well as individual character ought to be upheld with every possible degree of respect. I merely mention the fact; and, as a kind of collateral proof, insert the following copy of a petition, to which I was a subscribing petitioner, sent to Lord T—— at that time Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain.

“ My lord,

“ We, the inhabitants and parishioners of L. S. in the county of ..... beg leave

to make known to your lordship the disagreeable situation which your petitioners ever have been and still are (but for our hopes in your lordship's well-known attention to unprotected merit) likely to be continued in, by the non-residence of their rectors. The living of this parish being now vacant, and in your lordship's gift, we humbly presume to request the same in favour of the Reverend ..... a curate, who has resided and done duty in this neighbourhood, as such, for more than twenty-seven years; a clergyman whom we all respect for his virtues and on whom we can depend for residing with us. But, if given to a stranger, we are sorry that truth obliges us to declare, he sends us whatever curate he can get to do his business cheapest; assigning, as a reason, that the country is too unhealthy for him to live in, and the value of the living (120*l.* a year) too small to allow more than 16*l.* a year for a curate. My lord, we could enlarge much on this subject, but are fearful of intruding: we will only beg leave to make this remark, that all the twenty-seven neighbouring parishes in this district being in the same predicament, served by curates, (three, four, and sometimes five, churches to one curate,) we have little or no relief if we ride to any neighbouring church, for it is gallop and get forward with them all; and, from the little respectability of some of *their* characters, we cannot say we have

much desire. Your petitioners compose and contain every individual in the parish that pays tythe, and are all plain humble farmers, with little or no acquaintance with great men. But, emboldened by the high ideas they entertain of your lordship's considerate goodness, they earnestly solicit your lordship will be pleased to grant the rectory of this parish to the Reverend .....

“ And your petitioners, &c. &c.”

We were not successful; and this worthy clergyman remained a poor curate, until a considerate neighbouring gentleman-farmer, from pure regard to his character, made his life comfortable by presenting him to a small living in his gift. I rejoice in this opportunity of doing justice to the merit both of the donor and receiver.

I should not do justice to a worthy deceased rector, were I not to make him an exception to my general remark. There are some few who yet remember him, and all who do can bear testimony to the truly benevolent good character of Doctor T——. A pleasant anecdote of this gentleman, when he turned a deaf ear to what he did not wish to have forced back to memory, may not be unacceptable.

The doctor was considerably advanced in years and very deaf. An old college-chum-acquaintance had, for many years, made a convenient

point of visiting the doctor, or rather a visitation of a few weeks to the doctor's hospitable mansion, where he had always found a hearty welcome, although, being of the leaky sort, he was not the best suited for a sober man's companion: but the doctor's good-nature overlooked what he did not wish to have seen in his old chum. This gentleman, arriving at the doctor's on an evening when he had company, with many of whom he was acquainted, was in such high spirits from the circling glass, in addition to what he had gathered on his journey, that he could not refrain an attempt to be witty and pass a joke at his friend's expense.

The doctor was engaged with some ladies at a card-table, while the gentlemen were regaling with the bottle. The visitor hinted his intention, and was advised against it; but, persevering, he moved to the back of his friend's chair, and, raising his voice loud enough for the doctor to hear, he inquired if his old favourite black-eyed Betty (who made the doctor's bed while at college) was alive and well. The doctor would not hear, and continued the game with the greatest composure; but the ladies could not forbear tittering and laughing, which encouraged the visitor to repeat his inquiry a little louder. The doctor, rising deliberately from his chair, said he was sorry his chum could not make it more agreeable to stay longer, but he

would order the servant to bring out his horse immediately; and, taking up his silver bell from the table, he rang until his house-keeper appeared, to whom he gave directions about his chum's horse being ordered out. As soon as the noise of the bell would permit, the visitor wished to explain; saying his friend misunderstood him, nothing in the world being farther from his thoughts than being in a hurry to go away, as he had come purposely to stay a week or two with him as usual. The doctor, however, still turned a deaf ear, begged his friend to make no apology about making so short a visit, and again set his bell to work for his servant to bring the gentleman's great-coat, as he was in a hurry. At every interval of ringing the bell and giving orders to hasten bringing the horse out, the visitor attempted an explanation; but the reverend doctor, with a composed pleasant countenance, (while the whole company beside were ready to burst with their endeavours to refrain from laughter,) as often repeated his request that his friend would not make so many apologies about his stay, fairly hurried him out of the house, saw him mounted, wished him a good night, and assured his chum, that, when he could make it more agreeable to stay longer, he should be glad to see him again.

To judge of the clergy in this part of the country, half a century back, from a jingling bit



poetry I have by me, might not appear so undid, and I insert it merely as a laughable specimen of the *retort poetical*. My father was in the wine and tobacco trade, and received the following note from a curate just arrived in the country, who understood he was fond of a little ryming.

## 1.

Captain. .... I am told,  
 You sell wine that is old,  
 Good-flavoured, clean, and so forth;  
 If you'll send me a hamper in  
 Without any tampering,  
 I'll pay you for't what it is worth.

## 2.

I likewise stand in much need  
 Of some Indian weed,  
*Vulg. dict.* tobacco by many;  
 I have smoked some from you,  
 And believe me 'tis true,  
 I never smoked better from any.

## 3.

Pray send me six pound,  
 Made up square or round,  
 It signifies nothing at all;  
 And come when you will,  
 I'll pay you your bill  
 Whene'er you think proper to call.

To this, the following answer was sent.

Reverend sir,

1.

Doctor ..... and his curate  
Have made me obdurate,  
For they wanted wine, bright, old, and so forth;  
Though no coin in their breeches,  
They came with fair speeches,  
And promised to pay for't what it was worth.

2.

Now, my faith being strong  
And thinking no wrong,  
I trusted them both with brandy and wine;  
But believe me, good sir,  
Without pother or stir,  
They never came near to pay me the coin.

3.

To urge, sir, I'm loth, .  
Bad reflections on cloth,  
And a cloth that claims *jure divino* ; .  
But a curate, you know, .  
May rove to and fro,  
Pray then where must I look for my *rhino*?

However, to prove that more was said of the old than was meant to be attributed to the new comer, a postscript was added, signifying that the answer was only in conformity to the old adage of the church, viz. "*No pecunia, no paternoster.*" And, to make amends for the poetry, the wine and tobacco followed soon after.

## CHAPTER LXII.

*Pleasant and useful public meetings promoted; anecdotes of a rich man; improvements easily made, if undertaken properly; people in the country as profligate in principle as they are in cities.*



To return from this digression. It can hardly be conceived what difficulty I at first had to procure from twenty to thirty subscribers, at one guinea each, to establish an assembly for the winter-season; yet, before I left the country, there was one in most towns in the district.

I proposed next a book-society, the very sound of which was at first laughed at; but, by the persevering aid of two clergymen, one of the established church and the other a dissenter, it succeeded; affording, for many years, amusement with instruction, until at length I had the satisfaction to observe, there were many applicants for admission on a vacancy, when the number limited was complete.

Nearly about the same time, I planned the establishment of a weekly market, there not being one nearer than twenty miles; but it required management to overcome the many obstinate

prejudices opposed to it. I persuaded some gentlemen-farmers in the neighbourhood to agree to dine together every market-day, or forfeit a small sum each for absence; the forfeit-money to go to the reckoning. This little manœuvre answered so well, that, at the close of the year, when the first agreement ended, those who had regularly attended found so many pleasant comforts and conveniences attached to it, that they very readily agreed to extend the meeting, by a plan of association for the prosecution of robberies and other offences committed on the property of the subscribers. A committee of this association was to meet every market-day and dine together, subject to forfeit as before. And, this being an open committee for any subscriber to the association to join, if he thought proper to agree to the forfeits, it gathered strength most rapidly; and the plan itself, being much approved, was soon adopted by many considerable towns throughout the county. The town, where this new market with the association was holden, reaped considerable advantage, and there was scarcely an individual in the whole district who did not receive some benefit from it.

This may have too much the appearance of sounding one's own praise, yet why should I not be as just to myself as to others? I will therefore continue to claim credit for such improvements as I was the principal means of introdu-

cing; and, possessing but moderate other riches to bequeath my children, it is due to them to make good my claim to these small exertions, which some few of my quondam rich neighbours envied me much more than I ever envied their greatness.

This brings to my remembrance a smart retort to one of them, who, pluming himself on his property, was rebuking an honest tradesman for not attending to him so much as he expected; saying, "Why, fellow! do you not know that I rise every morning worth ..... thousand pounds?" "No," answered the man, archly, "I really did not exactly know before you told me; but, by God! that is *all* you are worth." Yet I have seen this man (who was neither loved by his kindred nor respected by his neighbours) come into a large company, when nearly the whole would start from their seats to bow to King Log.

Such is the strange infatuated folly of mankind! ever ready to make obeisance to riches, though without merit, even where they know, to an absolute certainty, they have no chance of receiving the smallest benefit from the party. This description of men I have ever regarded, and am confident ever shall regard, with an eye of superiority, when I discover them swelling with an assumed consequential pride, derived from riches only. Yet I respect rank and pro-

perty as much as any man, where the possessor makes a beneficial use of them or himself.

For time immemorial, a dangerous nuisance had existed at a ford, which was impassable when the tide came up. To avoid this, it was necessary to ride some miles about or await the fall of the tide. As the attempt of strangers to pass it, (for it was a place of considerable thoroughfare,) when the depth of water was doubtful, or at night, was attended with great danger, it seemed rather extraordinary that no public-spirited man had endeavoured to remedy an evil so generally complained of. It was the more so, as two gentlemen of property, magistrates of the county, who had successively lived within sight of it for a number of years, could neither go out nor return home, nor have friends to see them, without being subjected to danger or confined to time.

It affected me as little as any one in the county; but, being requested by some respectable individuals to take it in hand, I convened a meeting, suggested proposals, and procured an estimate for building a bridge and forming a long causeway. Finding the amount too great to be raised by private subscription, an application was recommended and made accordingly to the Court of Quarter-Sessions, for assistance from the county. The court consented to build the bridge, the committee engaging to make and

keep up the causeway by private subscriptions; so that, in a few months, I had the satisfaction of seeing this dangerous nuisance abated, by a brick bridge and a commodious long causeway. While the man, (a magistrate,) who, living nearest, was to receive the greatest benefit, was so much mortified, and his pride so considerably hurt, to think a person of little or no property, compared to his own, had taken a lead in bringing it forward and finally effecting it, that he punished himself, for several months, by driving through the mud and water, rather than travel over the bridge with his carriage. And such whimsical self-tormenting beings are some men, that he added to his own mortification by tendering a subscription of five guineas towards it, when he found the plan succeeding without his aid and against his threatened opposition at the sessions: his offer, however, was declined by the committee.

A country-life is not expected to produce much variety. It has likewise a general character for greater simplicity of manners and integrity of heart than in cities and large populous places; yet, in the course of several years, during which I was endeavouring to improve myself in agricultural knowledge, I occasionally met with incidents that tended to impress me with vexation, at discovering as much duplicity and deceit (considering the numbers) in the

country as can be found in the metropolis. In plain truth, as far as my experience teaches me, virtue and vice are not attached to one particular description of men more than another; they are neither stationary nor confined: simple swains, honest tars, &c. &c. are pleasant sounds enough, but in reality they are neither better nor worse than the rest of mankind. From various cases of profligacy and wickedness, that came before me as a country-magistrate, I select the following; as well deserving of record for audacity as any to be found in the Newgate-calendar.

A man, of the name of Thurston, was brought before me, charged by a farmer with having stolen two fat hogs from him. They had been traced to a publican's in my neighbourhood, where they were found just killed and hung up for cooling. By particular cuts and marks, they were well identified: the publican had bought them of Thurston, who, as a labouring man in husbandry, said he had reared them from pigs. He was to be conveyed twenty miles to the county-goal; the constable therefore hand-cuffed and locked him up, for the night, in a strong cage in the market-place. From this he broke out; first clearing himself of the hand-cuffs by means of a very fine saw, made from a steel watch-spring, which he held between his teeth to saw with. On his escape being discovered in the morning, a hue and cry was made in all direc-



but there were no tidings of him the whole

Thurston lived at a cottage, in a bye-place, even or eight miles distance, I had directed a party of the pursuers to enter the cottage at night; and, keeping all within quiet, watch for Thurston coming home to his wife the following night. As the night was done, one man sitting within and two men waiting his approach without. Thurston, however, having passed the two on the outside unobserved; and, lifting the latch, opened the cottage-door and walked in without speaking, heavily loaded with a naked dead body on his back, supported over his shoulders by a cord, the bite of which he held with his hands in front. It was fortunate, perhaps, for the man waiting in the night, that Thurston was thus encumbered and unable to make resistance; and, in that state of defencelessness, the man seized and made him sit down on a wooden form, or stool, to wait the coming of one or both of his colleagues. This was long; and, on procuring a light, the dead body which he was loaded with proved to be one of the hogs he had stolen, when alive, from the publican, and again stolen from the premises of the publican as soon as he had liberated himself from the hand-cuffs and the cage. When this hog was reported to be taken from the publican, the suspicion fell on the publican himself, as he had secreted it to save its being claimed.

and taken from him by the farmer. Nor was the real culprit in the least suspected of this felony, until apprehended with it.

The prisoner now desired to make a free confession of other crimes he had committed, and among them a murder. Being first admonished to take care and well consider the consequence, he persevered and declared, that, in company with another man, whom he mentioned, they together murdered the house-keeper of a farmer at D——y-common. This murder had been committed some months previous to the time of the robbery, various examinations had been taken, but no discovery made of the perpetrator. Thurston gave a minute detail of the circumstances; a warrant was issued, and the party he accused was apprehended, brought before me, and charged by him as an accomplice. The circumstantial account he related was corroborated, in many parts, by his absence from the place where he should have been at work, at the time the murder was committed, by his being seen in that neighbourhood agreeably to his statement, and by the state the murdered woman was found in, with a description of the goods in the house, corresponding with such accounts as had before been deposed by the people who first saw the state of things when the murder was discovered.

The examination occupied three days, as many witnesses were sent for who lived at some

twelve to sixteen miles distance. At every examination, he declared before the man he accused as his accomplice, in the most solemn manner he could express himself, that they really committed the murder. In answer to my exhorting him to beware of committing another murder, if, as the accused said, he was innocent, Thurston used this strong expression; "Sir, I know I am a lost man every way, and must soon answer for my many great sins before Almighty God; and, sir, if you were God Almighty himself, and I was to answer face to face, as I now do before you, I would say the same, that this man and I committed the murder." They were committed accordingly for trial: in the mean time, however, he recanted all he had thus advanced and confessed about the murder. They were tried and both acquitted; Thurston was then tried for the felony, convicted, and transported.

This was a country-swain! I knew of others equally atrocious, and am fully convinced that as much wickedness exists in the country as in crowded cities.

As it relates to my own difficulties, I must also mention one sorry specimen of ingratitude, as well as to shew the small dependance to be placed in friendships with those whose minds and actions are principally governed by avarice and motives of self-interest. I lay it down as an axiom, that an open-hearted liberal-spirited

man may lie down among rattle-snakes with as much safety as attempt to cultivate friendships or form connections with men of covetous or dastardly dispositions.

---

## CHAPTER LXIII.

*A country duel; ingratitude; a London duel, with its happy conclusion.*

~~~~~

WHILE I resided in I formed an intimate acquaintance, that seemed to ripen into friendship, with a gentleman respectable in his profession as a medical man, a literary man of considerable intelligence, and one whose smooth soft manner of talking (though it formed a contrast with my own blunt mode of speech) impressed me with favourable ideas of him, and I considered our repeatedly-avowed friendship to be mutually sincere. That he was satisfied of the sincerity of mine was evinced, by his sending an express to request my attendance on an affair of honour, having no one else so near, (twenty miles,) on whom he could safely rely, for so his letter mentioned.

I answered this trial of friendship, by leaving my wife, my children, and business, at the hazard of being obliged to leave the kingdom in the possible event of the quarrel; thus proving that his reliance was not unfounded. It is true, that the bashfulness of his opponent, on my waiting upon him, made the matter no way difficult for me to settle, much to my friend's satisfaction; but that was impossible for me to know before hand.

Not long after this, being engaged in an expensive undertaking, I was a little straitened for cash, and applied to an attorney to procure me 100*l.* for a few months. He informed me, that this particular friend of mine had lately told him he had 200*l.* to put out, and had no doubt therefore but I might be accommodated by him. I applied, as certain of a ready cheerful accommodation, and was not a little surprised at his pursuing up his mouth, with "My dear friend! how sorry I am! but I have lately laid out so much money, I cannot oblige you. I am grieved, very much grieved indeed; for, in the hazardous undertaking you have in hand, I have no doubt you are straitened enough." I turned hastily away, without deigning to inform him that I knew his excuse to be a falsehood.

Reporting the refusal to my attorney, he damned him for as arrant a Jew as any he was ever acquainted with, and advanced me the mo-

ney himself. However, to probe him a little farther, I wrote to him to know if he would be my security, should it be wanted, for that sum. I had an answer replete with "dear friend's and very good wishes to serve, but his dear-bought experience had taught him to be cautious." The silent contempt, with which I have treated this man since, has been all the resentment I have shewn: nor would I have ever mentioned the circumstance, but that, in giving an account of my struggles through life, I could not well avoid it; for, in the undertaking for which I needed the money, I certainly laboured under much difficulty.

This country-duel reminds me of another, in which I was concerned, in London. A respectable relation, older than myself, received a challenge from another gentleman, in consequence of some serious altercation and opprobrious language, on both sides, at Lloyd's coffee-house. I could not refuse, when called upon, to attend him, although I had long before declared, that the two last things I wished any friend to ask me, were the being executor to a will or second in a duel.

The place of rendezvous was at the King's-Arms tavern, Cornhill, whence we were to drive into Kent. My relation, his antagonist, and myself, were punctual; but we had to wait more than an hour for the arrival of the other second.

And such was the inveteracy of the parties at the time, that I feared all my efforts to keep them from blows would have been ineffectual. I was, at last, compelled to threaten each in turn, until I obtained a promise from them to remain seated on opposite sides of the room, and not to remove from their chairs without my consent until the arrival of the other gentleman.

I paraded between them; and, after a short silence, I requested to hear the origin of the dispute from each, without interruption from one another, in the hope I might find some better mode of satisfying these angry merchants, than by blowing out each other's brains. Yet it is likely enough they might have wasted a good deal of powder without injury, being equally unskilled in the use of fire-arms. I traced the first offence to the word *lie* and the retort similar, then to mutual accusations, threatenings, the retort valiant, and a challenge; all which, with some address, I did away, by persuading them to a retrograde motion, unsaying what each had uttered against the other, and rubbing off, as we proceeded, until there remained not a single word to quarrel about. But I acknowledge, that, without a grand auxiliary in the all-powerful word *if*, I doubt whether I should have succeeded. The other gentleman arrived just at the conclusion of this part of the rencontre; and, understanding how matters then stood, joined

heartily in smoothing down all remaining difficulties.

We then ordered knives, forks, and a clean table-cloth, as substitutes for swords, pistols, and a carpet. Claret, Madeira, Champaign, and Burgundy, succeeded; and, with this ammunition, so close a firing was kept up for three or four hours, without a man falling or flinching, that we, the seconds, pronounced our principals, who shook hands and parted in perfect good-humour, to be men of tried courage.

And so comes, — — — — —

CHAPTER LXIV.

Purchase an island, overflowed by the sea seven feet deep in spring-tides; build a wall, nearly three miles in circumference, to enclose it from the sea, with suitable buildings for a farm; nature of the soil, &c.



My residence was on the banks of a navigable river, where I kept a sailing-boat for the amusement of fishing, &c. On these excursions, I had frequently noticed a sunken island, (being covered by the sea at half-tide,) containing between two and three hundred acres of land,

which I thought it possible to enclose from the sea. I had sailed and rowed over it; and, when the tide was low, I had walked over it, the soil appearing rich and good.

The gentleman, to whom it belonged, dying, all his estates were directed to be sold; among the rest, this was put up and excited some laughter, no person conceiving that any bidding would be made upon it. To the surprise, however, of all present at the sale of the estates, a few biddings were made and I bought it for 40*l*. I purchased it in the month of May; and, when I mentioned my intention of embanking it round, to shut it in from the sea, and soon after really began to employ men for that purpose, my neighbours considered it so wholly impracticable, that they good-naturedly were divided in opinion respecting the undertaker; one part considering me as a madman, while the other set me down as a fool. Possibly, some might think me both; and, all the circumstances fairly considered, I believe the latter opinion would have been nearest the truth.

My only doubt, at the time, was the strength of my pocket, and I freely confess my own imprudence on that account; such speculative undertakings being best suited to those who have sufficient property to spare, without material injury to their family should it not succeed. I had to adventure the larger half of my property, yet I

felt so confident of success that I never hesitated.

I sent to the fens in Lincolnshire, and other places, for men suited to the work. I then framed a building that might serve afterwards for a stable, fixed it high enough to prevent the tide from flowing into it, kept a boat to attend, and employed a man to keep a kind of sitting-booth, to supply my workmen with good London porter, &c. and also to afford shelter in bad weather.

In July I made a beginning, and in the December following I had raised a wall, or embarkment, of earth, thirty feet thick at its base, battering away at an angle of forty-five degrees to seaward, until it was six feet thick at the top, and eight feet high; the foundation on which I fixed it being more than two feet above the level of the rest of the island. This wall was not more than two miles and a half in circumference, and carried over several deep rills or out-lets. Thus far, we had gone on rapidly and safely: the two ends of the wall were about 140 feet apart, separated by a deep ravine, through which the tide ebbed and flowed, with a current and fall similar to that which passes through the great arch of London-bridge, but stronger. Apprehending thus to the most hazardous part of the undertaking, I tried to persuade my two contractors to use some strong timber in the work, which

felt so confident of success that I never hesitated.

I sent to the fens in Lincolnshire, and other places, for men suited to the work. I then framed a building that might serve afterwards for a stable, fixed it high enough to prevent the tide from flowing into it, kept a boat to attend, and employed a man to keep a kind of sutling-booth, to supply my workmen with good London porter, &c. and also to afford shelter in bad weather.

In July I made a beginning, and in the December following I had raised a wall, or embankment, of earth, thirty feet thick at its base, battering away at an angle of forty-five degrees to seaward, until it was six feet thick at the top, and eight feet high; the foundation on which I fixed it being more than two feet above the level of the rest of the island. This wall was more than two miles and a half in circumference, and carried over several deep rills or out-lets. Thus far, we had gone on rapidly and safely: the two ends of the wall were about 140 feet apart, separated by a deep ravine, through which the tide ebbed and flowed, with a current and fall similar to that which passes through the great arch of London-bridge, but stronger. Approaching thus to the most hazardous part of the undertaking, I tried to persuade my two contractors to use some strong timber in the work, which I

offered to furnish exclusive of my agreement with them; but they refused, assuring me they could do it better without.

On Christmas-day (the tide suiting best for the purpose) we attacked it with all the force we could set to work. The exertions of manual labour were astonishing; by the measurement of some of the best men's work, no horse could have carted away the earthy loam, within the same time, which one man spitted and loaded into a barrow and another man wheeled away. The tide rose, but found the passage stopped: we continued raising the mound; but, for want of the timber I had recommended to stiffen and strengthen it, its own weight operated against it, squeezing the earth out at the foot as fast as it was loaded at the top. The spring-tides began swelling and rising higher every tide; so that, on the sixth from my turning and shutting the tide out, all this great body of earth was swept away, with scarcely a vestige of it to be seen; and the difficulty ten-fold increased, from the greater distance I had to fetch other earth.

The contractors, to whom I had let the whole, applied for more money. I had already advanced them considerably more than the agreement, without a word like a refusal: *all* was at stake. I determined most resolutely to advance no more for them to sport away at my risk, although I knew they considered me as entirely

depending on their knowledge, and that I could not do without them. I told them plainly my determination, that I would not advance another shilling until it was completed according to agreement; and that, if they were afraid, I was not, but would conduct it and be my own engineer and manager. Finding I was not to be bent to their measures, and fearful of the event, they ran away, indebted 125/. to the men, to whom they had under-let the work.

In this critical situation, I found myself early in January. A set of more desperate untroutable beings than these sea-wallers cannot well be conceived. Highly incensed at the loss of 125/. by their foremen, it was no easy matter to pacify and induce them to proceed in the work. But, daring as they were, they knew I was not afraid of them, and I knew they had sufficient confidence in any thing I promised. I refused to hear any thing they said in a body; they then chose and empowered three men to treat and engage for the whole. I at first offered to give them the same terms which I had agreed to give the two contractors, which were double what they were to be paid by them. They were afraid to undertake it at their own risk of succeeding, but would work for me at the same prices they had worked for the contractors, at my risk and under my direction. To this I readily agreed; and, to keep them to

steadiness and good behaviour, as likewise to stimulate them to the fullest exertion, I voluntarily promised them, (beside their pay for such work as they were to perform at my risk, whether I succeeded or not,) that, in the event of finally succeeding to turn and shut the tide out completely, by their steady exertion, I would then, as a *bonus*, pay them the 125 *l.* due from the contractors; but that any one, neglecting by idleness, drunkenness, or other bad behaviour, would forfeit his share. This gratuitous assurance cheered their hearts, and gave me such a command that I managed them as readily and easily as the best-disciplined troops.

The season of the year was much against me. I had to fell my timber in a wood, thirteen miles from my island: I cut down trees, from ten to fifteen inches in diameter, making piles of them from twelve to twenty-four feet in length. With an engine, I drove them in two rows, fifteen feet apart, across the ravine, or deep out-let, and as close together in the rows as we could drive them. I secured them together by girders, or beams, across, within five feet of the bottom and three feet of the top, keyed and bolted on the outside. This was my coffer-dam to hold the earth in the centre of my mound, as a strong core, or heart, to the whole.

By the seventeenth of January, all was ready for another sharp contest with the sea, to deter-

mine, by force of arms, who should conquer and keep possession of the disputed property. I took the command myself: my troops were all stationed before day-break, our enemy then retreating in order to advance again with greater force, (the neap-tides being over and the spring-tides commencing).

The morning was cold and frosty: a drum and three cheers was the signal for attack. Knowing the obstinate perseverance of my foe, and that our contest would be long and strong, I repressed the ardour of my troops a little at the onset. Every half hour I suspended the attack; and, from several barrels of strong porter ammunition, which I had provided ready on the spot, and elevated on a small tower made of earth, I issued out half a pint to each man; and to such of them as had not provided better for themselves, my bread, butter, and cheese, were welcome. I served it all out myself, with a cheering kind of language suited to the purpose, by which, I verily believe what one of my officers (a master-carpenter) for the time said, viz. "That I had more work done for a few barrels of porter with a little management and address, than many men would have obtained for as many hundred pounds."

The enemy advanced against us and persisted in the attack for several hours; when, having proved the strength of our works and failed.

retreated. At the severest part of the struggle, (high water,) I advanced in front, with a waller's tool in one hand and a pot of porter in the other; when, repeating the words that are related of King Canute, I said, "Thus far shalt thou go, but no farther:" adding, as he began to retire, that, although a conquered foe, I bore him no enmity. We then gave him three lusty cheers, drinking the King's health on such an accession to His Majesty's agricultural dominions. However, being well acquainted with my opponent's manœuvres, and that he was recruiting his strength daily, and might probably return in his fullest force, aided by his old and powerful ally, *Boreas*, I was obliged to keep my troops in full exercise of raising and strengthening my works for some time after defeating him, with a strong guard to watch his motions at night. By these means, I obtained and secured my island from the sea; and so far, at least, proved the practicability of the undertaking. As to the prudence of it, under my circumstances as I have before mentioned, I have but little to say.

Having thus turned a small part of the sea into dry land, I soon built a comfortable farmhouse for my bailif and the workmen, whom I employed in filling up the small rills and making fence-ditches where necessary. But it was some months before the land would bear the weight of horses, and it would have been much better if I

had kept no more than a pair of them at work for some years; but I was not then aware that the superabundant salts would have continued so long in the earth, to the injury of grain-crops. The soil was rich, being an accumulation of rotten vegetables, which grew up every summer and fell in the winter, with the weight of a silty sediment from the water. This was evident to the sight, by drying a spit of the earth when dug, as it would then readily separate into thin layers, scarcely thicker than a wafer, yet clearly exhibiting every branch, &c. of the vegetable salt weed, even to the distinguishing some of their species.

I certainly flattered myself I had secured a comfortable competence, and felt gratified that my little fortune was the work of my own hands, and as honourably obtained as if I had gained it by the spoils of war or any other mode.

Too eager to reap the fruits of my enterprise, I rushed into an unprofitable expense of ploughing the greatest part of the land before it was fit. I thought to have sweetened it the sooner by working and exposing it to the various elements, but I was deceived. If I had left it to its own operations of drying, cracking, and getting rid of the superabundant salts, by a gradual draining from the rain, &c. and been content with a small produce from feeding of sheep for a few years, I should have done much better, without

subjecting myself to the humiliating unpleasantness of borrowing money and the provoking inconveniences attending, one of which I have already mentioned.

CHAPTER LXV.

The corn-factors contest with the farmers; origin of the corn-factors.

~~~~~

ABOUT this time, a serious contest arose between the corn-factors and farmers, in those counties that send corn to the London market. The attempt of the factors, to raise their commissions from six pence to nine pence a quarter, was as ill contrived and as badly managed, for a number of sensible men, as it is possible to conceive. Had they taken a little trouble to explain the matter, and satisfied a few of their friends in the country that it was reasonable and just, I am persuaded the point might have been carried with little difficulty. But they issued their resolves, (such as passed in their private committees;) as mandates which the farmers were obliged

to obey; but John Bull has a mortal dislike to compulsory arguments.

I attended all the early meetings in my own county and some in the adjoining; and, with a few exceptions, a more strange heterogeneous medley of characters, for forming strong and efficacious resolutions to connect and bind the whole as one body, could not well have been convened together. As an assembly of men, mostly unacquainted with each other, collected from different parts and varied in opinion as to what was best to be done, there was little probability of their ever making a firm stand against a complete close body of intelligent men, united by the same interest. Besides this, a considerable number of the farmers were under pecuniary obligations to their respective factors; and this circumstance probably deceived the factors, in the first instance, as to their power of coercion, which I have no doubt would have had its full effect, if the factors had condescended to use persuasive means. The farmers, as a numerous but dispersed body, would have been of no avail; but, agreeing (by chance) to nominate and appoint a committee, with full powers to act, they did the only thing that could enable them to make head against their opponents.

I was one of the committee, and we fortunately had a chairman who united great abilities with unconquerable perseverance. Yet I am well sa-

tified, if the old corn-factors had held out a little longer, the new houses, that were brought forward by the committee and set up against them, must have fallen. For, notwithstanding the resolutions of the farmers committee, as to their own individual conduct, and their strong recommendations to the great body of farmers to support the new houses by leaving some balances of cash with them, the fact was, that the greater part drew for the full amount of sales, before the customary time of the factors receiving it from the purchasers. If, therefore, instead of opposing and striving to lessen the consignments to the new corn-factors, they had encouraged the sending consignments to them, they must have been overwhelmed and crushed for want of capital; and the farmers, in general, would then have believed their failure was owing to the want of a sufficient commission: This was on the point of happening, when the old factors unsaid what they had for months advanced in the public papers, as to the insufficiency of the commission, and recanted, by rescinding their resolutions and soliciting the farmers, individually, to return to them at the old commission. It was a victory obtained by the farmers, from the want of firmness, confidence, and unanimity, among the old factors.

This struggle led my thoughts back to the origin of the corn-market; which, as few beside

myself can now give an account of, may have its use in being recorded, as well as shewing from what trifling beginnings great matters may arise.

About four-score years back, corn-factors, meal-men, and middle-men, as now designated and well understood, were then unknown. My grand-father was then a baker of some repute in the city, and it was from my father and his two brothers I learned the following history of the commencement of corn-factoring, and thence the other two.

At that time, when the consumption of corn was small compared to what it now is in the metropolis, there was no description of people that stood between the grower of corn and the baker. The farmer brought his samples up to town; and, taking them to Bear-quay, near the Custom-house, met the bakers, who were the principal buyers of bread-corn, and there made their bargains with each other. It is unnecessary to detail concerning other grain, which was sold in the same direct manner to the other purchasers; and it is thence that the present corn-market, in Mark-lane, is still called Bear-quay market. The farmers, according to circumstances and situation, put up at different inns, &c. when they came to town: the Green Dragon and Bull inns, in Bishopsgate-street, were two among others to which the farmers resorted. The landlords of these two inns, in particular, were men in good

esteem, and by habit became well acquainted with the quality and value of corn; insomuch, that the farmers, who used their houses, would request of them, at times when they had not sold, to take the samples to Bear-quay on the following market-day and sell for them, paying afterwards for their trouble, &c. The farmer soon found that this made a considerable saving to him, in preference to staying in town until the next market-day or making another journey. At length, the farmer, finding that the inn-keeper sold the corn as well as he could and confiding in his host, thought he might frequently save his own time, as well as the expense of the journey, by sending the samples up to the inn-keeper to sell and do the best for him, agreeing to give an allowance of three pence a quarter for the inn-keeper's commission.

This was the beginning of corn-factors. Mr J—— and Mr S—— were the two first; there was a third, who began nearly at the same time, whose name I do not recollect. As this mode proved mutually advantageous, the factoring business increased, and it was not long before these gentlemen found that the keeping of an inn was but a secondary consideration; and, as men of discernment, they quitted it to devote their time entirely to factoring. The son of Mr S—— had been bound apprentice to my grandfather, as a baker; he wanted a year or more to

serve of his time, when his father required his assistance in the corn-factoring line. That point was easily settled, and he exchanged a business on the decline for a new and more advantageous employ, in which he succeeded with high exemplary credit.

The building of the present corn-market is just within my own remembrance, and shews how rapidly the numbers and business of corn-factors must have then increased. The meal and middle men followed; and now the poor baker, who ranked next to the farmer, purchased his corn, and sent it to the miller to be ground, (who then considered himself obliged to the baker for employing him,) is the last upon the list from the grower of corn, through the factor, the miller, the meal-men and middle-men, until he bakes and delivers it to the consumer.



## CHAPTER LXVI.

*Progress of vegetation on land first taken from the sea; gold medal from the Society for Encouragement of Arts, &c.*



To return to what more particularly concerns myself. My hopes and fears, about the produce of my island, ebbed and flowed successively for several years. The growing crops, while in the grass, promised well; wheat, barley, and oats, branched luxuriantly and set fairly. I have known many capital farmers, when walking over my island only a month before harvest, declare they had no doubt but the crops they then examined would prove good; yet, soon after, they would begin to die at the roots, and, of those which continued alive, the grain shrunk as it ripened, and the wheat had all the appearance of being mildewed or blasted. The oats and barley yielded rather better, but not much. I also tried beans and pease, which did not repay the seed. The articles, that succeeded best, were rape or cole seed, brown mustard-seed, and rye-grass seed; the samples of which were of a superior quality to most, but the quantity was small.

For the first six or seven years after taking my island in from the sea, I lost a considerable sum of money. If I had permitted it to lie undisturbed all that time, or only sown rye-grass, or fed sheep, I should not only have saved materially, but am persuaded the land itself would have been in a better state for the growth of corn. It was an untrodden path, and I had to find my way, without a guide, as well as I could.

I have made these observations, in the hope they may possibly be useful to others who may engage in like undertakings. And I rather think it a reproach to this country, that so many thousand acres of rich valuable salting-lands should lie waste, which might be enclosed at a moderate expense where adjoining to the upland. Such new land would immediately let for sheep-pasture, to pay good interest for the money employed to embank them in; and, at the expiration of a ten or fourteen years lease, would prove as valuable corn-land as most in the kingdom.

It was my fortune to set the example, for which the Society for the Encouragement of Arts and Sciences were pleased to honour me with their gold medal. On my attending to receive it, a worthy deceased baronet, a member of the society, was pleased to say the successful undertaking merited knighthood, and inquired if it would be agreeable to me to be introduced to His Majesty, for having so increased his territory.

I could not forbear smiling, as I thanked Sir Joseph; observing, it was not my ambition to become a poor knight, but that I would remain content with the humble title of a half-pay invalid lieutenant, as best suited to my circumstances.

*John Smith*

---

## CHAPTER LXVII.

*A family rescued from deep distress.*



I HAVE already remarked, that a country life cannot be supposed to afford much novelty of adventure or anecdote; yet the following may be reckoned an unpleasant exception, wherein I was called upon to exercise a portion of courage, in the rescue of others from a situation very dissimilar to what I had ever witnessed, and for which I was totally unprepared.

Of all the criminal passions which have been known to actuate the human race, there is none which appears so unaccountable and unnatural as that of connections among men. A circumstance of this kind appeared, too evident to admit of doubt, against the father of a fine family

of children and the husband of a woman esteemed handsome. His wife, apparently deserted by all the world, sent for me, imploring my aid, by calling forth the most disagreeable resolution I ever could expect to have been called for, in order to rescue her and the family from the consequent disgrace and fatal ruin that would ensue, if the husband suffered the ignominious punishment which he deserved. It was a call which, probably, few beside would have acceded to and adventured. Although intimate with the family from childhood, I never entertained the least suspicion or heard a syllable from others, until informed, at some distance from home, that such a circumstance was notorious, and that two young men had been taken before a magistrate and sworn to the fact. I was truly grieved, and on my return home expected to hear of his commitment.

On the following day, being in a large company at a friend's house, the conversation after dinner, on the women retiring, soon turned on that deplorable unhappy business. All were surprised that he was not in custody; and, while we were lamenting for the family, a note was brought me from the wife, requesting me to meet her at her sister's on an affair of the utmost importance to herself and family. I read the note to the company, most of whom thought the smallest appearance of being any way concerned in it

vising might prove unpleasant. I considered it to myself thus: "A woman, whom I have long known and respected, in distress, with a young family, calls upon me for aid when left defenceless by the rest of the world. She writes to me, that she has no one else to rely on; and shall I be such a coward as to refuse attending her?"

I went directly, and found her waiting in great and anxious distress. She confirmed all I had heard, and, to my extreme astonishment, informed me she had long known he was so addicted, (even within a few weeks after marriage,) and it was too melancholy a truth to be denied; that all she had now to hope, was, if possible, to save the family from the additional disgrace of his being hanged; that this could only be done by his flying the country, which, unless some friend whom he both respected and feared would assist her in representing to him his situation and danger, it was not all that she and her children could say would have any influence on him to do.

I confess, this was the first time that I ever hesitated whether I could comply with a lady's request; observing thus to her, "If your husband had been guilty of a robbery, or even a murder, I might think myself justified in giving the aid required and have braved any danger that might arise, without hesitation, in comparison to the present request; but, under his infamous situation, it is different. It is not a pecu-

niary or personal danger that deters; there is a more odious one, the difficulty of approaching without the risk of soiling one's own reputation. however, I can not bear to see a family in so cruel and forlorn a situation, and refuse giving them such assistance as they think may rescue them from the extreme disgrace that threatens."

Confident in a character the reverse of his poor wretch, that of an unbounded affection for the fair sex, I felt no fear from imputations of that kind, and I therefore accompanied him home. Being told I wanted to speak to him, I entered the parlour with an air of usual familiarity, in an apparent state of intoxication, my wife present. I stopped his advance, by first addressing him: "It is not that I think you are worth preserving; for, as to the comfort of a more better loss, and the saving it as to myself, I consider the greater punishment from my to your aged father, your wife, and children, to save them from the distress which your ignominious death may bring upon them, I recommend you to make your exit before the outraged laws of nature and my country are put in force against you. I have compassion to your family, and not for you. I warn you of your danger; beyond I will not yet in your power." During this speech, which I made as concise and pithy as possible, he stood motionless in the middle of the room; his eyes

giaring as ready to burst from the sockets, his whole countenance having the appearance of a man in the agonies of death from strangulation; and, as I quitted the apartment, he sunk down on the sofa.

Leaving directions with his wife what was best for her to do, I hurried back to the company I had left, my spirits much agitated, yet well satisfied with what I had done. Let others weigh prudence by grains and scruples, I never yet scrupled to go where I thought duty of any kind called me.

The following day, a warrant was issued to apprehend him, (I was not then in the commission,) but he was gone and fled the kingdom. The next thing was to get the poor woman's affairs settled with the creditors, and fortunately she was known to them as the most active in the business. On investigation, their affairs were found very bad, and I recommended her to apprise all to whom she was indebted of the exact state of things. I assisted her through the whole, and represented her case to the creditors, who agreed to such composition as it appeared to me the effects would produce: lastly, when her own brothers and her father-in-law declined being security for the payment of a composition by instalments, I joined a worthy-hearted neighbour in giving our notes for the payment of the money. Without this, the house where they lived

and carried on an established business must have been sold, and the prospect of a comfortable maintenance destroyed.

This produced all possible good to the family, at the time; but, to confirm it, I was again called upon about a year after. The wretch had been continually distressing his family for remittances; when, after an absence of twelve months, his wife informed me he had returned to England, with a view, as she believed, of alarming them into a grant of greater pecuniary assistance; adding, that, unless I once more stood their friend, by seeing or writing to him in such strong terms as might compel him to quit the kingdom, they were fearful of the consequences both to himself and them. This induced me to write the following severe letter.

“ I have just returned from paying the last solemn duties of a friend to your much-respected and worthy, but pitied and lamented, father; and, being strongly solicited by your friends, who yet wish to save you from the last ignominy that a presumptuous infatuation seems to threaten you with, I am induced to take this melancholy opportunity of endeavouring to awaken you to a sense of that duty you owe your wife and children. I am under the necessity of reminding you, that a little more than twelve months back, urged by the pleadings of your



wife and a desire to alleviate her sorrows and those of your aged parent and your children, I saved your life: for, if you had remained until the morning after I gave you the needful advice, I firmly believe nothing could have saved it. Pause, then, for a moment, and take a retrospective view of your own situation at that time, with that of your wife and family. When your life was thus preserved by quitting the kingdom, you had health, strength, abilities, good clothes, with some cash, and only yourself to maintain. On the other hand, you left a wife so deeply involved in debt, that nothing but the generosity of British creditors, strongly excited by her unmerited yet strange accumulation of sufferings, joined to the exertions of a few friends, could have possibly saved her and your five children from being turned out of house and business. Thus was she rescued from immediate want, and allowed by those creditors to endeavour to procure a livelihood for herself and children, by giving her credit through another person's name. Surely, you must be devoid of all manly resolution, or you would certainly, at such a time, have exerted yourself for a support. On the contrary, you have, coward-like, meanly solicited to be supported with the bread from the mouths of your children, regardless of their wants, instead of endeavouring to repair the injury you have already done them. Repeat not.

such an idle lie, as to say you can not get employ; there are clerks, shop-men, waiters, porters, soldiers, and sailors, wanted in all countries, and the worst of these lots is preferable to sotsish idleness. But, admitting that you could not get employ, the money, which I am informed you have already received, ought to have maintained you for three years. It is clearly suspected that you are returned to England; and, if found out, nothing can prevent your being brought to justice. The creditors, supporters, and friends, of your wife, have also come to a determination, that, if they know she gives you any farther assistance, they will withdraw their aid from her. Thus circumstanced, you can only save your life by perpetual banishment.

“Adieu; may God direct you! &c.”

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

*Courting in the suds at midnight.*

As a kind of set off against the foregoing disagreeable occurrence, the Reader will think the following more consonant to the natural course of things, though he may not envy the luckless wight.

Preparatory to a family-wash, my servants were all retired to bed, leaving only a maiden sister of mine up, who undertook to call the servants at an appointed hour. At nearly twelve o'clock, she roused me, by declaring there was some person or persons endeavouring to force open the back door into the kitchen. Being assured, by the steady correctness of her account, that there was some cause of alarm, I was soon dressed; and, taking *sweet lips*\* with me, I went down stairs softly, and had not waited long before I distinctly heard an attempt to open the door. Leaving the light in an adjoining room, I moved as quietly as possible towards the back door, which was bolted. In about three mi-

\* A Damascus-blade broad-sword, that was made me a present in the East Indies, and which was kept in my chamber.

notes, another attempt was made and I clearly heard some person on the outside breathing hard. Undrawing the bolts as quick as possible, I sallied out: the moon shone beautifully, but I could not discern any person. However, being well satisfied that some corporeal substance had been there, and could not be far off, I hastened round the corner of the house, where I found a tall fellow standing close up, with his back against the end of the house. I advanced *sweet lips* in such a line with his neck, that, with a back stroke, I could have struck his head off in an instant, and of this he seemed well aware. •

By the moon's light, I saw he was a tall strapping fellow, and was uncertain whether he had comrades or not. I ordered silence at the peril of his life, conveyed my prisoner in, secured the door, and fastened his hands behind him. I then questioned his intentions: at first, he refused giving an account, until, finding that would not answer, he said he courted one of my maid-servants, and, understanding that to be washing night, he had walked nine miles across the country to see her.

The servant he mentioned was a likely smart young woman, to whom I sent my sister to inquire if it was true. She denied it: ordering all hands up, and being assembled in the kitchen, she again denied any knowledge of him. On *this*, I led him into a parlour, directly under my

own bed-room, secured his hands and feet, and, locking the door, took the key with me to bed.

Rising early in the morning, I found Mrs Betty in tears; and, dropping on her knees, she acknowledged her swain, imploring my forgiveness of both. On opening the door of the room in which my prisoner was confined, my olfactory nerves were so offended, that, guessing the plight the poor devil was in, I directed Mrs Betty to take in a pail of water, mop, &c. to cleanse her spark with as well as the room, as some punishment to herself. And, when released from his durance, ordering the man a dram, I gave him this advice, that, if ever he again came courting to my house, to come in the day-time, walk boldly up to the door, knock like a man, and not come sneaking in the night like a thief; especially as I gave my female-servants permission to invite any honest sweetheart, they were not ashamed of, to dinner on a Sunday or other convenient time, on condition that they admitted them only at the front door, and not smuggle them in backwards in the dark. These injunctions being attended to, with good conduct for one year in my service, upon their marriage I always gave them a wedding-dinner; and, according to their other merits, farther encouragement.

## CHAPTER LXIX.

*Again a widower; marry again; act as a magistrate; country witches.*

~~~~~

I WAS a widower at the time of the last anecdote, having been married ten years to my second wife, when she died of a consumption, leaving me three children.

Man was not born to live alone. Having experienced much comfort in the married state, and my children requiring some careful female to manage and bring them up, I soon determined to look out again. I had vanity enough left to think I could soon obtain a good wife; but the difficulty was to procure a mother for my children in the same person. However, I was not long in making another choice, and it is no small merit to have proved herself a good and affectionate mother-in-law to those children, who are all doing well and reflecting the highest credit on their parents as well as themselves. And I may as well add, in this place, that, of six children by my present wife, four are alive and as promising as the hearts of parents can wish.

I had been frequently solicited to act as a magistrate, but as repeatedly refused to listen to it while I had any concern in the liquor-trade. (1) When I declined that and engaged with my island, I was again requested by my neighbours; but, still wishing to be excused, I observed it better suited men of more independant property, whose decisions carried weight; while every blockhead, who considered himself richer than the magistrate before whom he had business, would think his property entitled him to shew any airs he pleased, which might be productive of unpleasantness.

At length, as my prospects from my island grew better yearly, and the country was in real distress for want of active magistrates, I consented to undertake a task that I well knew, from the state of irregularity and disorder the district was in, would be a Herculean one. The necessity there would be to punish many daring idle depredators, that had long harboured about the country without a visible mode of living, the number of smugglers and unlicensed pot and gin houses that required to be suppressed, with many others who had long set all law and order at defiance, would demand all the resolution I was master of to bring back, by lenient or (where necessary) severe means, the various defaulters to a just sense of the duty which every one owes to society. I likewise knew it would require equal

firmness to protect the poor in their rights, (which, being few in comparison, ought to be held the more sacred,) from the injustice of some of their employers, and the too frequent oppressive removals of paupers by parish-officers, so often done from pique, resentment, or interested motives.

To these matters I settled my mind firmly and resolutely, determined, to the best of my judgement, not to deviate from the path of strict justice. How I carried those resolutions into effect, the county is the best judge. That many thought themselves offended I have no doubt: those parish-officers who were not suffered to tyrannise over the poor; the constables of twenty-seven parishes, in an extent of twenty-seven miles, who had long been in the habit of shameful neglect of duty, connivance at public-house tippling, and other misdemeanours; the publicans, who suffered gambling and encouraged the idle and disorderly; the pilfering depredators and idle vagabonds of various descriptions; all these might complain, as individually feeling the curb that checked and made them shrink from a fearless resolute arm of justice, ready to correct where necessary. Yet I am persuaded, that even those individuals, who might complain of what particularly affected themselves, would allow, with regard to others, that the greatest care and pains were taken to advise, persuade, admo-

nish, and to reconcile and try, by lenient measures, to remedy the evil complained of, before the strong arm of justice was raised.

The indigent complainant was sure of ample justice and protection against the wrongful rich and powerful, whom I first endeavoured to convince of their error, recommending ample satisfaction to the injured party, as if done from their own conviction, in preference to its being done by an order. Yet I was sometimes compelled to use stern authority, and even order into custody obstinate refractory persons, who, from pride and conceit of their strength of purse, I have known audaciously bid defiance to justice, declaring they knew they could afford to spend more hundreds of pounds than the magistrate could tens.

One of this description, having outraged all decency in contempt of court, and whose commitment, being filled up, I was about to sign, finding that I was in earnest, made his submission as obsequiously mean as his conduct before had been audacious to the court. Ignorantly conceiving that submission implied kneeling, he was proceeding to drop on his knees, if I had not prevented it, informing him, that, although the court was determined to support its own proper authority, for the credit and good of the country and not from personal consequence, yet

they wished not to see any man degrade himself so low as he was then proceeding to do.

I was told afterwards, by some of his neighbours, that it had done him wonderful service; and, meeting him in company at a gentleman's house not long after, he inquired, jocularly enough, how I came to fix on him in preference to others, who he believed were full as bad as himself. His question caused a smile round the company; and, by way of answer, I asked him, supposing he had on his farm a parcel of unruly hogs, that wanted wringing at the nose, whether he would not wring the roughest first. He took it in good part, saying he would ask no more questions.

The first year that I acted was truly laborious, all up-hill work with but little assistance; the two old magistrates in the neighbourhood being seldom able to attend. After that, it became much more easy and pleasant, by the addition of a gentleman, who, to a sound judgement, integrity, and abilities, coincided in opinion with me, that no man should accept the office without attending to it sufficiently to do the country justice.

It may easily be supposed, that the country as well as metropolitan magistrates have curious complaints made to them. The following is an instance. An elderly woman, accompanied by her daughter, came to my house, complaining

that her neighbours accused her of being a witch, and that she had teats in her arm-pits, with which she suckled young imps. She therefore requested I would examine her and certify if it were so or not. This was before my family, who joined in a laugh I could not refrain from. As soon as I could well compose my countenance, I assured her that, without examination, I was satisfied there was no witchcraft about her; but that, if there was any in the family, I rather suspected her daughter, (a comely rosy-cheeked girl about eighteen,) whose bewitching powers I thought strong enough to induce an examination, if she chose to solicit it.

This brings to remembrance a circumstance that occurred between thirty and forty years ago, sufficiently recent to be proved by some, now living, who were spectators. An old woman, suspected of being a witch, was taken to Farm-bridge-ferry, in Essex; and, in the view of hundreds of persons, was really made to swim, tied by a rope to the stern of a boat, to prove whether she was a witch. I was not there myself; but a brother, now living, was. The poor old creature narrowly escaped drowning.

CHAPTER LXX.

Trip to France; premium for a road-harrow; publish tables for the preservation of estates; observations on maintaining the poor.



A few years previous to the revolution in France, I had occasion to cross over to Calais: I travelled through French Flanders to Lisle, &c. and returned by the way of Dunkirk.

I pretend not to make any remarks concerning old France, as it was then, yet cannot help noticing the astonishing changes produced in that unhappy country in so short a period of time. The rich lands through Flanders were delightfully pleasant and tempting to the eye of an agriculturist; insomuch, that I could scarcely refrain from coveting my neighbours lands, from an opinion that I could farm them better. But, however inviting they were then, the finest estate in the whole country would not tempt me to accept it now, if obliged to reside there; for, without security, what is property? without protection, where is liberty?

The Society for the Encouragement of Arts, &c. again honoured me with a premium for the

invention of a road-harrow, by which a pair of horses, with a man and boy, could perform more in one day and much better, in tearing up the high quarters and filling the deep ruts with the gravel, than fifty men could do by stubbing.

In the same year, I published Tables for the preservation and improvement of landed estates, and for the promotion and increase of the growth of timber upon them. This gave much umbrage to many of my farming neighbours, who, considering it in a wrong light, thought it likely to injure their interests, by enabling the landlord to see and know the difference between a good and a bad tenant. I feel well satisfied, however, that, if I had not suppressed it out of respect to some worthy neighbours, the good tenant would have been benefited and the bad only have suffered.

Having also bestowed some thought and attention on the best mode of maintaining the poor, I had some hundreds of addresses to the public, printed and given away in my district, in the hope of promoting benefit-societies. The following abstract will sufficiently convey my thoughts, &c.

“ At a time when so many new schemes are in agitation for the better management of the poor, while objections are raised against them all, and yet all acknowledge that some alterations and improvements are necessary, I beg to be in-

dulged with making a few observations on two points, which ought to be considered previously to the establishment of any new mode, and a proper attention to which might decide the preference due to one above another. These points are, the *rights of the poor* and the *comforts of the poor*.

“ With respect to the poor man’s rights, I presume they are naturally the same with the rich man’s. Set the prince and the basket-maker together on a desolate island, and it is certain the rank of the former will not be so good a plea for superiority as the skill of the latter. But, in a state of civilised society, things necessarily and wisely alter from a state of primitive nature, and the rights of the poor man must be estimated differently for the general benefit of society. A willingness to labour is all the return that can be required of a poor man, in order to secure a continuance of the humble enjoyments belonging to his station. If, either by age or sickness, he be rendered incapable of labour, or if no work can be found for him, he may still demand some share from those who, without labour, are supplied with abundance out of the general stock. It is not enough to provide for the poor by keeping them in the cheapest manner possible, they are to be maintained in the possession of their comforts.

“What are the *poor man's comforts*? They lie in a small compass, and therefore ought to be the more sacred. One great source of comfort, to the poor man, is his wife and children: if he be not over-burdened by them, despised and insignificant as he may be abroad, he is of some consequence at home. There he finds those who care for him, obey him, and come or go at his command. He is not without a sense of the moral charities of father, son, and husband; and, when sick and dispirited, it is the greatest of his comforts to be attended upon by those who love and regard him. There may be some danger of sinking even a stout heart by the forcible separation of husband and wife, parents and children, in time of sickness and distress; nor would one surely wish them to be entirely indifferent to each other.

“The poor man, even in his poverty, loves to cherish some idea of property; to say, *my house, my garden, my furniture*; and, when his whole domestic establishment goes to wreck, on a removal to a workhouse, it is natural for him to grieve at the loss of things that, by use, were become valuable to him. He does not like to consider himself only as a lodger, or a guest, though in a much finer mansion than his own. He does not, with satisfaction, wear clothes, though warm, that belong to the community and not to himself. And are not these virtuous prejudices?

“The poor man is still comforted under his poverty, while he thinks himself free. This freedom of his, God knows! is circumscribed by such a number of imperious circumstances, that in effect it is reduced to little; but he pleases himself with a possession magnified by imagination, and is gratified to think he may go out and come in, work or play, at his own option. He likes to be the judge of his own wants and to provide for them after his own manner. He even chooses to have the determination whether he shall boil or bake his Sunday’s dinner. He can not be easy under confinement, abhors the thoughts of being put under lock and key, thinking no man deserves a prison who has not committed a crime. To be a cipher in the state and therefore thought a slave, according to the idea of some mad-headed political theorists, does not hurt him at all; but he has a mortal dislike to arbitrary rule exercised over all his actions.

“Lastly, the poor man places some of his comforts (often it must be acknowledged too many) in social and convivial enjoyments. The bare mention of these, in a poor man, strikes many with the idea of great criminality, and the appellations of drunken and idle are liberally bestowed with great indignation. To get drunk, and squander at an ale-house what ought to maintain his family, is undoubtedly very wrong in a poor man; but that, after a hard day’s work

or week's labour, he should love to relax a little in that place which affords an hour's importance to his heart, is surely so natural that it cannot deserve much censure. The evening chat at a neighbour's door, the Sunday church-yard politics, the holiday festivities, the rustic games, and athletic exercises, are as welcome to the labourer as the opera-house and Almack's to the peer. And who will say that the pleasures of the former are not as rational as those of the latter?

"If these observations are admitted as true, I hope a plan, founded on the friendly societies, for rendering the poor of any parish or parishes, who are thus inclined, more independant and less burdensome to their parishes, and for promoting such a beneficial and philanthropic design, will be adopted, until government, in its wisdom, shall think proper to establish a similar or better mode."

The proposed plan then followed. I sent numbers of them to the principal members of both houses of parliament, in hopes they might be considered worthy of parliamentary notice. It might be presumptuous in me to suppose that the measures adopted since, by government, originated in my suggestions; should they have aided in the smallest degree, the knowledge of it would have afforded me much gratification.

CHAPTER LXXI.

The island improves in value; sink three wells for fresh water, but am disappointed; discover a surface of the earth, at the depth of twenty-two feet.



THE crops of my island annually increased in value, but I found myself much at a loss for a supply of fresh water. From the general depth of the wells in the adjacent country, I thought it likely I might strike on the same level of gravel and sand which supplied their springs. So far, my conjecture proved right; but I was disappointed by discovering a spring of salt water instead of fresh, and I mention it here merely on account of a curious circumstance discovered in sinking three wells in different parts of my island.

At the depth of five or six feet, we found a strong blue loam, which continued about twelve feet with little or no variation. In sundry parts of this loam, we found single oyster-shells, rather larger than common, which became soft when exposed to the air. Below this, we had different strata of earths of various colours; among these,

there was one of as light a colour as pipe-clay, but not a stone in any of them.' At the depth of two and twenty feet from the surface of the island, we came to a thin layer of a blackish spongy-like substance, which, when dried and examined, very clearly shewed the roots, stems, branches, and leaves, of various vegetables. A number of pieces of sticks were found close above this layer, countenancing an opinion that it had formerly been the surface of the earth. I do not pretend to investigate how that surface became nearly thirty feet below the present high-water mark, but such was the fact. Beneath this dark-coloured layer was a tolerably mellow earth, that readily fermented with acids; and, five or six feet lower, we came to the spring.

In the three wells, which were at considerable distances, we regularly found the same strata and appearances; (but, whether the change that has taken place happened since or before Father Noah's time, I must leave to those who pretend to see farther into a mill-stone than I do.) However, it is pretty evident the change cannot have taken place within the last eighteen hundred or two thousand years, from four tumuli, or barrows, of earth, upon the upper surface, in the centre of which I found human bones, charcoal, and other vestiges of sacrifices that had been made at the time of their burial; some parts of iron instruments of war, such as spear-heads, &c.

with broken urns of Roman pottery; and this, added to the uncommon pains that must have been taken to form the two largest of the tumuli, of materials not to be found in the neighbourhood, clearly proved that the persons so buried must have been men of great consideration at the time. In all probability, some of the earliest invaders of Great Britain; the creeks and inlets serving as a good shelter for their vessels, as well as securing a good retreat in case of a defeat.

CHAPTER LXXII.

A dreadful fire; house and offices all burnt; save my family from the windows, in the dead of the night.

— — —

EARLY in the spring of the year 1790, the growing crops on my home-farm, as well as the appearance on my island, being favourable, I thought of painting my dwelling-house, (in which I was born,) which it had wanted for some time.

On the sixteenth of March, a preparatory scouring of the wainscot was begun in our usual

sitting-room, in order to clear it for the paint. We had previously removed into a middle parlour, into which the stair-case entered below. Our servants being rather fatigued, we went to bed somewhat earlier than usual, a little before ten o'clock. Between twelve and one, my wife was awakened by the crying of one of our children in the adjoining bed-chamber; and, while slipping on a garment to go into their room, she thought she smelt fire, and jogged me to make known her fears: however, being often accustomed to false alarms of thieves, fire, &c. I paid no attention, gave a round turn in the bed, and was asleep again in an instant. But her shrieks on opening our chamber-door, at the head of the stairs, to satisfy her suspicions, too certainly convinced me that something was wrong. Springing out of bed, I ran to the door and found the stair-case, with the room below, all in flames. The door was instantly closed again, to prevent the draft of those flames from entering our chamber. The vent that had thus been given, by opening the door, having afforded the fire additional strength, it raged and roared loud enough to frighten stouter hearts than women are in general supposed to possess; but, in this instance, my wife shewed uncommon courage. She flew to the children's room and to rouse the two female-servants, while I staid for a moment *to consider the best means of saving our lives.*

There was no other way to escape than out at the chamber-windows, one of which I had just thrown up, thinking to lower myself by a sheet in order to fetch a ladder for them; but one of the maids, rushing by me in her fright, was going to precipitate herself out at this window. Convinced, by this, that it would be most dangerous to leave them, and not being certain I should readily find a ladder, I forced her back into the room she came from, and assured them all I would either save or perish with them. Having thus determined, I took two of the beds, with the bedding, and threw them out at the window, and, from a large clothes-press in the chamber, added several arm-fulls of household-linen to the heap under the window.

My wife, by this time, had brought the children to our room, but refused to leave them, insisting on their being saved before her. The maid-servants stood on no such punctilios, but were screaming and striving which should get on the outside first. I obtained a support for my left foot on a narrow projecting ridge, over the lower window, holding by the inner part of the sill of the chamber-window with my left hand. I then received one at a time, and by my right arm lowered the two servants on the heap of bedding, &c. without injury. I took the children next, as handed to me by their mother; and, while one maid steadied the other upon the heap,

I could just manage to lower the children sufficiently for them to be received safely. After lowering my wife in the same manner, I returned into the chamber to see what more could be saved. From the double chests of drawers, I soon threw out such drawers as were unlocked; the others I seised by both handles, burst the locks, and saved what they contained.

My lungs began now to be affected; and, from the increased roaring of the fire and the darting of the flames through the crevices of the door, I thought it prudent to retreat from an enemy too powerful to contend with. I therefore lowered myself from the window, much to the satisfaction of my wife, who was much alarmed at my not following them immediately: my clothes, which had been thrown out at the window, were collected and I hurried them on as quick as possible.

The fire had not yet burst out, but was confined within the house. I had none to help besides my wife and one of the maids; the other, being in her shift only, was put with the children into the small house at the bottom of the garden, to clothe herself with any thing she could find and keep the children safe. My man-servant had been sent, with a pair of horses from my home-farm, a fortnight before, to assist in ploughing at my island: a servant-boy only remained, who was still fast asleep in a room at the

extreme end, over the brewhouse. Calling him up, I hurried him off to alarm the town, at a mile distance, for assistance. My nearest neighbour was a miller, who, from the piercing screams of one of our maids, together with my hallooing after I quitted the house, I thought must have heard. I expected him every moment to come to our assistance, but it appeared to be nearly an hour after we left the house before any one came.

In the mean time, I was lamenting I could not get to a bureau and book-case in our common sitting-room, where my most valuable papers, with various minutes and memoranda of my travels and remarks, were deposited; but, my wife reminding me that sundry account-books had been moved, together with a writing-table, into our best parlour at the farther end of the house, I conceived there might be a possibility of saving one though not the other. I ran to the stable for some strong instrument to break open the outside shutters of the windows, and fortunately caught hold of a pick-axe, with which, at the first stroke, I split and opened one of them, demolishing the lower sash at the next blow. I felt as if possessing the strength of twenty men: I sprang through the window into the room, saved my books and papers that were there, and could have saved the furniture if any man had been on the outside to receive them; but the

frightful threatening prospect, within the adjoining room, made the attempt too hazardous. In the centre of the partition, between the two parlours, there were double folding glass doors, to throw the rooms occasionally into one; through these, the flames were seen raging and rolling over and over, like boiling liquid fire. Every pane of glass appeared like a burning sun, darting its rays too fiercely for the eye to cope with, and threatening every moment to burst through and overwhelm me: I made my retreat in time.

The fire now began to find its way through the roof and windows. All we could do more was to remove the things thrown out to a greater distance from the house. While thus busied, and before any assistance came from the town, the flakes of fire had fallen among my out-buildings, which, being surrounded with dry straw and litter for the cattle, and having hay and corn within, soon caught fire and spread a wide destruction over all my premises.

People from the neighbouring town now came flocking down by hundreds, but too late to render any essential service. I looked round, found my family safe, dropped a tear, and thanked God it was no worse. My exertions had been so great, that the night-cap, though my head was exposed to a keen frosty air, without a hat, was as wet as if soaked in warm water. But I now found myself as reduced and weak, as before I

had experienced an almost supernatural strength; until my neighbour brought me a bottle of wine, which I drank off and regained strength.

In London and other large cities, it is not surprising to hear of people so depraved as to plunder and steal from ruin and distress; but, in a country-village, more than forty miles from London, I did not expect it; yet, so it was: many articles, which were seen and known to have been saved, were stolen before day-light, and the doors that led to an arched vault were burst open by other ruffians, who stole a considerable quantity of my wines and other liquors. I was obliged to get a few of my neighbours to watch over and guard the little that was saved, while, wrapping myself round with a blanket, I gave such directions as were most likely to save a little more.

Two years before this, among other curtailments in my expenses, I had lessened the amount of my insurance, and a fearful thought occurred, whether I was insured at all. Christmas-quarter was the period of renewal, and I had for years been in the habit of leaving the payment of the premium to the agent of the fire-office, in the country, who, crediting me for the amount, sent the receipt by the newsman, who took the money back. But I now recollected I had heard of no such receipt, nor had I paid the money: however, I thought it prudent to keep this matter to

myself, but I trembled for it inwardly, until I saw the publican at whose house the newsman put up. On inquiry, he informed me it had been left with him several weeks; but, as he (the publican) owed me more money, he had neglected bringing it until he was provided to settle the balance with me. I readily admitted the excuse, and this recovery of what I feared was lost reconciled me greatly to what I really lost, which amounted to about a third of the whole.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

*Kind attention of neighbours; rebuild my house;
favourable prospect of my island.*

~~~~~

My neighbours came with pressing kind offers of accommodation at their houses. Having, from early youth, been habituated to determine quickly in cases of emergency, I was not long before I resolved what was best to be done in this.

An old brick wash-house, at the bottom of a yard, was the only building saved, except a part of the stable. Consulting my wife, we agreed to fit that up as soon as possible and to live in it.

while the house was rebuilding; well knowing, that, unless I was constantly with the bricklayers and carpenters, it would not be ready for habitation by the following winter. At one end of the wash-house, I made a snug little cabin for our bed-chamber, of that which before was a sand-hole, and the remainder served us for parlour, kitchen, and hall.

While this was getting ready, we accepted the kind invitations of our friends for ourselves, the youngest child, and a maid-servant. The hospitable attentions we received from those friends we divided that time among, can never be forgotten; they are engraven deep on the tablet of my memory. Yet we were eager to get back to the ruined spot, to inhabit *Lilliput-hall*; so true it is, there is nothing like our own home though ever so homely.

I had already paid largely for learning something about building houses, which determined me to be my own surveyor; and, keeping constantly on the spot with my workmen, I erected a sightly strong brick house, forty feet in front and thirty-five deep, with as many conveniences as most, and had it ready to receive us by the Michaelmas following. What remained to be finished I got done in the winter, flattering myself, that, having recovered from such a fiery ordeal, I might possibly pass the remainder of my days in a house built from the ruins of a fire,

and enjoy the fruits of an island raised from the sea. But I was doomed to experience still harder trials, and prove how fallacious all my hopes and expectations were.

The prospect of my rape-seed, mustard-seed, and wheat, growing on my island in the January following our calamity by fire, was so very promising, that I would not have sold these expected crops only for less than 600*l.* and I had every reason to expect that each succeeding year would prove better and better. At any rate, it was now sufficient to maintain me in comfort, and I could have boasted, that, humble as I was as an individual, few, beside myself, had created their own estate and so increased the riches of His Majesty's kingdom, as to make thousands and thousands of ears of corn grow where none had grown before. But, alas! how soon were all these flattering prospects overcast!

## CHAPTER LXXIV.

*Inundation; complete ruin; meeting of creditors;  
generous conduct of friends.*



WITHIN eleven months after having my property devoured by the flames, and narrowly escaping with our lives, I was destined to see the remaining *all* of my little hard-earned property swallowed up by the ocean, without a power to help myself; and, while standing with folded arms on the highest part of the embankment of my island, I looked down on the raging watery element swelling itself to a height that had never been known before, and over-topping my walls as if in search of what I had formerly wrested from its dominion, seeking to revenge itself by the destruction of that property the fire could not reach, I too assuredly saw I was a ruined man, but gave no way to despondency. Hard and unequal were my struggles against two such outrageous elements as seemed combined against me. Though beaten, I was not subdued; my spirit remained unshaken, and, in those distressing moments, I resolved to endeavour at recovering the island for those to whom I was indebted,

rather than abandon it, without a struggle, to the remorseless rage of the enemy.

I gave the necessary orders for what I meant to execute; and, returning home, at night, when I retired to my pillow, consulted what ought to be done relative to my own and the interest of others. The result of my determination was, to follow the same advice I had frequently given to others, when consulted under the pressure of their misfortunes. I slept soundly for a few hours, and the next day put every thing in train.

The manner of this, and the consequent result, will be more readily given and understood by a copy of my letter to S— M—, Esq. secretary to the Society for the Encouragement of Arts, &c. in answer to a letter of inquiry from him, than by any lengthened account I might attempt to write now: it flowed then in the fullness of my heart. I give it with the preamble, as printed afterwards by my friends for distribution.

“ From the various and contradictory accounts which had circulated relative to the damages sustained by Mr H—, by the high tide, on the 2d of February last, on the land he had enclosed from the sea, and for which the Society for the Encouragement of Arts, &c. had adjudged him their gold medal, a letter

was written to him, requesting to know the facts; and the following circumstantial account of his sufferings, within these last twelve months, was transmitted to

“ S—— M——,

“ Adelphi,  
“ March 12, 1791.

“ *Secretary to the Society for the Encourage-*  
“ *ment of Arts, &c. London.*

“ To S—— M——, Esq.

“ Sir,

“ The kindness and friendship expressed in your letter claim my warmest acknowledgements; and, as you request to be informed of the real state of my misfortunes, I will endeavour to place it in as clear a point of view as possible: for, having nothing to reproach myself with in regard to such accumulated misfortunes as I have experienced in so short a time, (accidents which human sagacity could neither foresee nor prevent,) I have no reason to be ashamed of being unfortunate. On the contrary, I feel a secret satisfaction in having endeavoured to do my duty as a man whose views are not wholly confined to this spot, and bow my head, without repining, to the disposal of Providence.

“ It was no longer ago than the 17th of March last, that I had the heavy misfortune to have my house, barn, and out-houses, all burnt down, with difficulty saving our lives. My loss from



this (above my insurance) was great to a man who never could boast of affluence, yet I looked forward with a pleasing confidence. My island (so lately embanked from the sea) was beginning to repay me most bounteously; it cleared me 300*l*. the last year, with a promising appearance of great increase for years to come. I had rebuilt my house, &c. and got my family together again.

“ In this situation of my affairs, the second of this month produced a tide on our coast, higher by a foot than is remembered by the oldest man living. My island fell a victim to its ravages: above one-fourth of the wall, or bank, had settled nearly a foot more than the rest; this was intended to have been raised eighteen inches last summer, if my loss from the fire, and the consequent attention to rebuilding, had not obliged me to defer it. This delay occasioned the loss of my island: the tide, flowing seven or eight inches deep over 150 rod in length of walling, flooded the whole island. Attending to the fall of the tide, I found my island left full of water, too fatal a proof of the strength of my walls, though it satisfied me there was no breach.

“ By extraordinary exertions, (the more so from the harassed situation of my mind at the time,) I drained the water four feet below the surface of the land, in a few days. I then had the walls surveyed, and an estimate made of

what it would require to repair them and secure the island from a similar accident. This amounted to 500*l.* at least. I had it not, and could not think of borrowing without a greater certainty of payment than I could pretend to; for, if my island should become a total loss, I knew I had not sufficient beside to pay what I owed already. I therefore did not think myself at liberty to lay out money that belonged to others without their consent, though to save the miserable wreck of my own fortune; and, as there was a necessity to come to a speedy determination, I resolved on sending to those to whom I owed a sum of money exceeding 20*l.* and requesting their meeting on Wednesday, the 9th instant; informing them the reason, and that I would then lay before them a full state of my affairs.

“ We met. This was the first time in my life I distrusted my own fortitude: attempting to speak, I found myself incapable of utterance; my feelings overpowered me and I was obliged to leave the room abruptly. I can only say, they were the feelings of a father (considering his misfortunes as affecting his children) that overcame me.

“ I have been in various engagements by sea and land. I was in the second earthquake off Lisbon, in several others on the Island of Sumatra, belonged to a ship that had the plague on board in Turkey, was shipwrecked off Plymouth

after an absence of two years, wounded and rendered incapable of farther active service in India; yet never knew the want of courage before. In every other situation and point of view, I could encounter danger and difficulties with resolution.

“ The state of my affairs was thus: I had, by fire and water, within one year, lost upwards of 3000*l.*; but, if enabled to recover and secure the island, my loss would be reduced to about 2000*l.* laying the damage to the land, from the effect of the salt water, at the lowest estimate, but it may prove considerably more. I owed rather more than 2500*l.* and the remainder of my property did not amount to more than 1400*l.* beside my half-pay as a lieutenant. Having delivered such statement of my affairs, I had the satisfaction to find my conduct approved of. My creditors, instead of distressing, soothed me, and they voluntarily proposed and agreed to accept ten shillings in the pound:

“ Such, sir, is the distracted situation of my affairs, and I do not wonder at there being various reports concerning it, though I am no way apprehensive of any to the prejudice of my character; for, in that, *poor* as I am and unfortunate as I have been, I fear not the strictest scrutiny.

“ I remain, sir,

“ Your very humble servant.”

“ February 24; 1791.”

## CHAPTER LXXV.

*Soothing and liberal courtesy of noblemen, ladies, and the public; their benevolence.*

From a very generous attention to my misfortunes and situation, I was enabled to recover the island for myself and to continue undisturbed in my home-concerns. Not content with their own private contributions, they advertised and solicited for me in the public papers. The peculiarity of my misfortunes attracted the public notice, and I was honoured not only with subscriptions but letters of sympathy and condolence from noblemen, ladies, and gentlemen, both soothing and flattering to a mind so harassed as mine had been.

Were I to select any for insertion, it would lay me under some difficulties in making the selection; and it might possibly offend both those whom I made choice of without their consent, and others, who, though omitted, exhibited equally strong proofs of benevolence and goodness of heart; while to insert the whole would occupy so much room, that it might be considered not only as a piece of vanity, but an attempt to

swell my book. I therefore omit them altogether.

My creditors were but few in number. Most of them not only readily agreed to the proposal of relinquishing one moiety of their claims, but contributed liberally to the subscription, and some went so far as to compliment me privately with the other moiety. Well as I was acquainted with the generosity of a British public, I was surprised to learn the amount of the benefactions subscribed to so unknown an individual. I therefore thought it but just to put a stop to them by the following letter of thanks, which I inserted in the public papers.

*“To S—— M——, Esq. Secretary to the Society for the Encouragement of Arts, &c. London..*

*“Sir,*

*“Sensible of the obligations I am under to you, with several other gentlemen, Members of the Society for the Encouragement of Arts, &c. for opening and patronising a subscription on account of the heavy and accumulated misfortunes I had experienced, in so short a time, by the ravages of fire and water; misfortunes, which had reduced me, with a large family, from a state of decent competence, acquired by the sweat of my brow, to the very brink of poverty; I should appear an ingrate, were I not*

to make my acknowledgments in this public manner. It would be equally unpardonable, did I not, at the same time, return my grateful thanks to those of my private friends and acquaintance, who, in the hour of trial, have proved themselves worthy of so sacred a name. The man, who has ever basked in the sun-shine of prosperity, knows not to a certainty whether he has a real friend; but, in this arduous trial, I have found most of mine true, and in consequence look back on my misfortunes rather with pleasure than regret.

“Sir, had not my neighbouring friends thought proper to open a private local subscription under the following honourable mark of approbation, viz. “We, the undersigned, being perfectly sensible of the accumulated losses lately sustained by Mr H——, do request that he will accept the sums annexed to our respective names, as a tribute due to his public services in R—— H——;” and had not you, sir, proposed opening a public subscription in my favour, I never could have thought of either. How great, then, are my obligations to both, when I inform you that the amount of benefactions is 1017*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.* which has not only enabled me to recover and secure my island against such outrageous tides in future, but has empowered me to settle with all my creditors immediately. That their donations have had such effect, must be the highest gra-

tification to liberal minds; and, as I never could be taxed with being backward to relieve, while I had it in my power, I am not ashamed to have received benefactions so honourably bestowed.

“ To the noble, generous, and humane, who, without any personal knowledge, have, from the representation of my case, most bounteously relieved; to you, who brought such a case forward to the public; and to my much respected friends who knew me, and so kindly exerted themselves in my favour; I beg leave to return these public thanks, together with the blessings of a family, who, from the dire prospect of ruin and distress, again look forward with a pleasing confidence.

“ I am, sir,

“ Their and your  
most grateful humble servant.”

A short time before this, I received the following complimentary address from the town-people of R——, accompanied by a sum of money, requesting I would purchase such a piece of plate with it as would be most agreeable.

“ The inhabitants of the parish of R——, sensible of the many benefits which the hundred of R—— in general, and this town in particular, has received from the various exertions of ..... of ..... in this neighbourhood, especially by the *market* brought forward and established

by his perseverance; together with the other public meetings instituted by him, tending to support the market, the benefit from which every individual in this town participates more or less; are happy to congratulate him, on the honourable and creditable termination of his late unavoidable misfortunes, as well as to express their satisfaction, on hearing, that (acceding to their wishes) he means again to step forward as a magistrate; and they do request his acceptance of a piece of plate, as a small token of their esteem."

To make the above more clearly understood, it may be necessary to say, that, from the final destruction of my property, I declined acting as a magistrate, from a sense of propriety; and I could afterwards have wished to be permitted to remain, without resuming the office; but the earnest solicitations of neighbours, with a letter from the lord-lieutenant of the county to the same effect, could not well be refused.



## CHAPTER LXXVI.

*Having recovered my island, find the crops destroyed and the vegetative powers thrown back by the superabundant salts; the prospect of restoration dangerous and tedious.*



THE growing crops, that looked so promising before the inundation, were totally destroyed. I ploughed some of the land as soon as it was in condition to bear the horses, and sowed a few oats and a little mustard-seed, purposely to try the vegetative powers of the land and ascertain the effect which the salt water had produced. I hoped for the best, but was fearful it would prove as I afterwards found, that the land was again so saturated with the salts, as to require the same time, labour, and expense, to bring it round to the state of vegetation it was in prior to the inundation.

I repaired and heightened the sea-wall all round the island, and ploughed up and fallowed as much land as my agricultural strength would admit, that I might be at a greater certainty as to its powers of vegetation the following year. Those seeds,

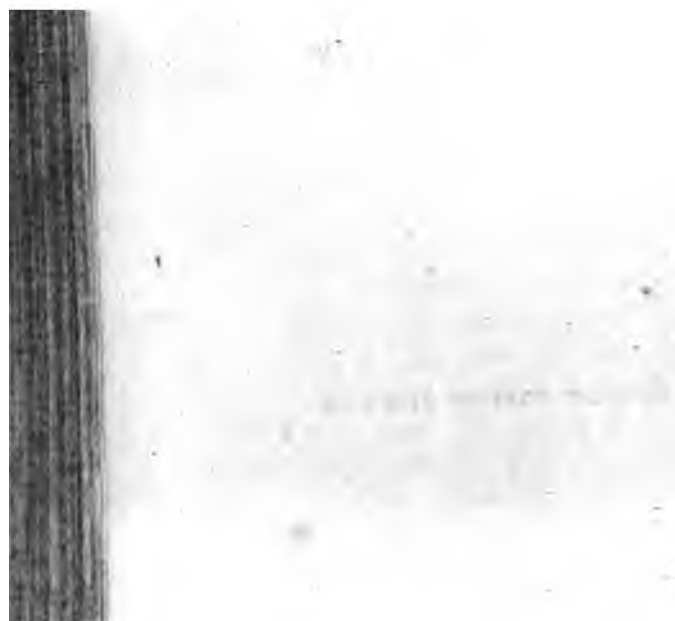
which I sowed at first, came to nothing, exhibiting much the same appearance as after I first enclosed the island. The crops of the succeeding year confirmed my apprehension, that, if I meant to keep and farm the land myself, I should have nearly the same tedious expensive process to go through as I had before experienced. At this time of publishing my *Memoirs*, (1807,) it may be proper to remark, that the island has recovered from the effects of the inundation; and, in the hands of the present occupier, produces as good wheat as any in the county.

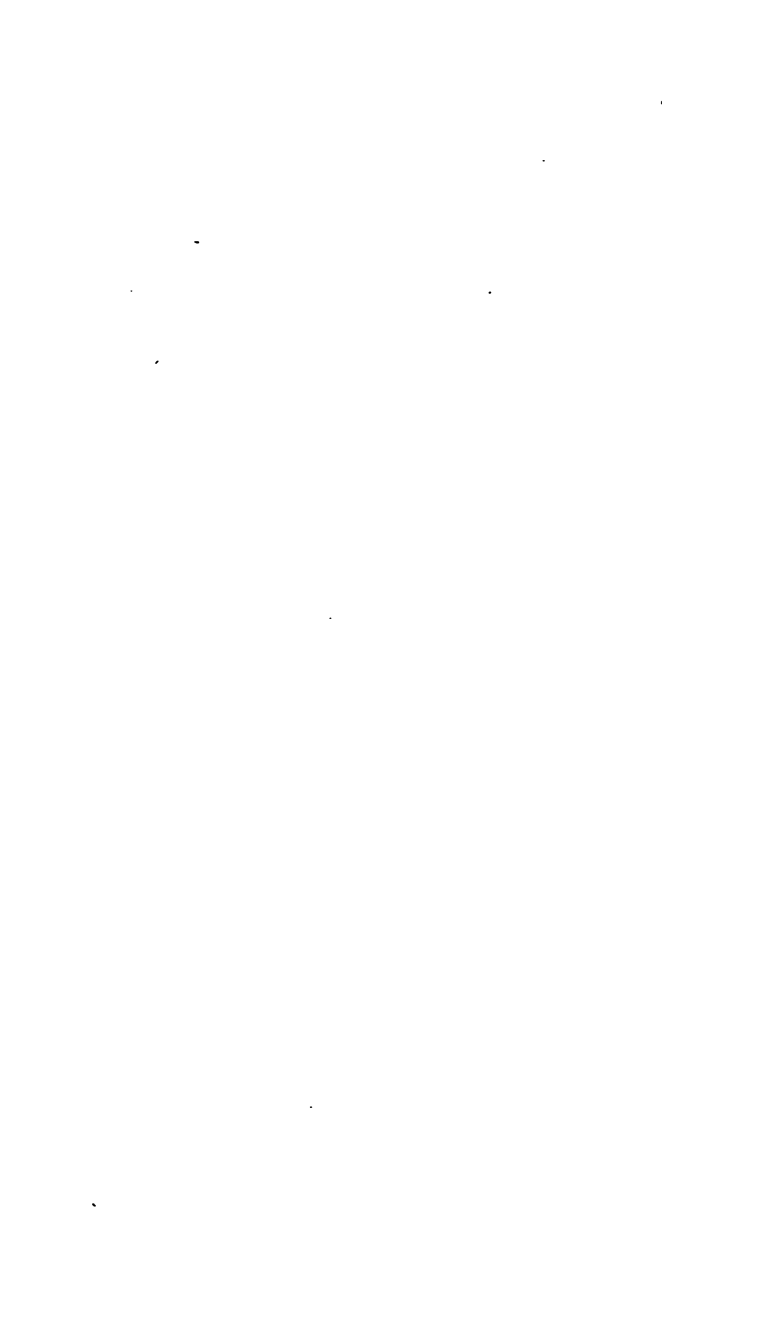
I sickened at the heart, through fear of the consequences after what I had so lately endured. My family was grown too large and my means too small to run the same risk, if it could be avoided. My mind laboured in resolving what was best to be done. My affairs lay in a small compass, so as to enable me to chuse, but it was necessary to make that choice soon.

The papers teemed with favourable accounts of how much might be done by good farming in America; and various pamphlets described the country and the ease with which a person, with a large family and small property, might bring up their family and provide for them. All this would have had little or no weight with me, if my own recollection of the plenty and comfort I had witnessed in America, long before the re-

volution there, had not aided in leading me to believe such accounts were true. I was aware that it would be an arduous undertaking, but I considered myself, both from general and particular knowledge, as likely to succeed as any, and that it was a duty I owed my children to exert myself to the utmost for their advantage.

END OF VOLUME THE FIRST.





14. 04.

1









**THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT**

**This book is under no circumstances to be  
taken from the Building**

Form 410



